



PUBLISHED FOR SISSA BY SPRINGER

RECEIVED: October 16, 2019  
ACCEPTED: December 17, 2019  
PUBLISHED: December 30, 2019

## FQHE and $tt^*$ geometry

**Riccardo Bergamin and Sergio Cecotti**

SISSA,  
via Bonomea 265, I-34100 Trieste, Italy

E-mail: [rbergamin@sissa.it](mailto:rbergamin@sissa.it), [cecotti@sissa.it](mailto:cecotti@sissa.it)

ABSTRACT: Cumrun Vafa [1] has proposed a microscopic description of the Fractional Quantum Hall Effect (FQHE) in terms of a many-body Hamiltonian  $H$  invariant under four supersymmetries. The non-Abelian statistics of the defects (quasi-holes and quasi-particles) is then determined by the monodromy representation of the associated  $tt^*$  geometry. In this paper we study the monodromy representation of the Vafa 4-susy model. Modulo some plausible assumption, we find that the monodromy representation factors through a Temperley-Lieb/Hecke algebra with  $q = \pm \exp(\pi i/\nu)$  as predicted in [1]. The emerging picture agrees with the other predictions of [1] as well.

The bulk of the paper is dedicated to the development of new concepts, ideas, and techniques in  $tt^*$  geometry which are of independent interest. We present several examples of these geometric structures in various contexts.

KEYWORDS: Anyons, Extended Supersymmetry, Topological States of Matter

ARXIV EPRINT: [1910.05022](https://arxiv.org/abs/1910.05022)

---

**Contents**

<b>1</b>	<b>Introduction: the Vafa proposal for FQHE</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>2</b>	<b>The Vafa model vs. the microscopic physics of FQHE</b>	<b>4</b>
2.1	Generalities	4
2.2	Charged particles in magnetic fields $\equiv$ 4-supercharge SUSY	5
2.2.1	Electrons in a finite box with magnetic flux	5
2.2.2	Magnetic system $\rightarrow$ 4-SUSY SQM: the linear isomorphism	7
2.2.3	Motion in the plane	8
2.2.4	Comparing Hermitian structures on $H_\Phi$	8
2.2.5	Introducing defects	10
2.2.6	The Vafa superpotential emerges	11
2.2.7	The coupling $\beta$	11
2.3	Conclusion of the argument: emergence of a unique vacuum	12
<b>3</b>	<b>Review of basic <math>tt^*</math> geometry</b>	<b>14</b>
3.1	4-supercharge LG models: vacua and branes	14
3.2	$tt^*$ geometry	16
3.3	The $tt^*$ monodromy representation	19
3.4	$\mathcal{R}_x$ local	20
3.5	$\mathcal{R}_x$ semi-simple	20
3.6	Computing the monodromy representation	22
3.6.1	Asymmetric approach (homological)	23
3.6.2	The UV approach (“CFT”)	24
<b>4</b>	<b>Advanced <math>tt^*</math> geometry I</b>	<b>25</b>
4.1	$tt^*$ monodromy vs. the universal pure braid representation	25
4.2	Complete and very complete $tt^*$ geometries	26
4.2.1	Configuration spaces	27
4.2.2	(Very) complete $tt^*$ geometries	27
4.2.3	Khono connections	28
4.3	First examples of very complete $tt^*$ geometries	29
4.4	A fancier viewpoint: $\mathcal{Q}$ -reconstruction	32
4.4.1	Generalities	32
4.4.2	$w$ -plane OPEs	34
4.4.3	Hurwitz data and defect operators	34
4.4.4	Complete $tt^*$ geometries and Coxeter groups	36
4.4.5	The case of one chiral field	38
4.4.6	$N$ -fields: a formula for the brane amplitudes	39
4.4.7	$\tau$ -functions vs. brane amplitudes	40
4.4.8	UV limit: the $\mathcal{Q}$ conformal blocks	41
4.5	Relation with $\mathfrak{sl}(2)$ Hecke algebra representations	43

4.5.1	The Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov equation	45
4.5.2	Hecke algebra representations	46
4.5.3	Examples	48
4.6	Chern-Simons, Jones polynomials, minimal models, etc.	48
4.7	Comparison with the asymmetric limit	49
4.8	Puzzles and <i>caveats</i>	49
4.9	Relation with the Vafa proposal for FQHE	51
<b>5</b>	<b>Advanced <math>tt^*</math> geometry II</b>	<b>52</b>
5.1	Symmetry and statistics	52
5.1.1	Special case: $N$ non-interacting copies	52
5.1.2	The Fermi model chiral ring	53
5.2	$tt^*$ functoriality and the Fermi model	53
5.2.1	Review of $tt^*$ functoriality	53
5.2.2	Application to Fermi statistics	55
5.3	Examples of $tt^*$ -dualities	55
5.4	Fermi statistics vs. Hecke algebras representations	58
5.5	Relation with the Heine-Stieltjes theory	61
5.6	The fermionic truncation	62
5.7	$tt^*$ geometry for non-univalued superpotentials	64
5.7.1	Abelian covers	64
5.7.2	General Abelian covers	66
5.7.3	Finite covers vs. normalizable vacua	67
5.7.4	$tt^*$ equations in $(\mathbb{C} \times S^1)^b$	67
5.7.5	The covering chiral ring $\mathcal{R}_A$	69
5.7.6	A fancier language	70
<b>6</b>	<b><math>tt^*</math> geometry of the Vafa 4-SUSY SQM</b>	<b>71</b>
6.1	Generalities	71
6.2	Topology of the field space $\mathcal{K}_{d,N}$	72
6.3	Homological braid representations as $tt^*$ geometries	74
6.4	The FQHE quantum system	74
6.4.1	Characters of $\text{Gal}(\mathcal{A}/\mathcal{K})$	74
6.4.2	Fermionic truncation vs. $\theta$ -limit	75
6.5	The $tt^*$ geometry of the Vafa model is very complete	76
6.6	Determining $\lambda(\theta)$	77
6.7	Comparison with Vafa's predictions	78
6.7.1	Allowed fractional filling levels $\nu$	78
6.7.2	Non-abelian statistics (principal series)	79
6.8	The emergent unique ground state	80
<b>7</b>	<b>Conclusions</b>	<b>80</b>

## 1 Introduction: the Vafa proposal for FQHE

The Fractional Quantum Hall Effect (FQHE) describes some peculiar quantum phases of a system of a large number  $N$  of electrons moving in a two-dimensional surface  $S$  in presence of a strong normal magnetic field  $B$  at very low temperature (for background see [2]). These quantum phases are classified by a rational number  $\nu \in \mathbb{Q}_{>0}$ , called the *filling fraction*, which measures the fraction of states in the first Landau level which are actually occupied by the electrons

$$\nu = \frac{2\pi N}{\Phi}, \quad \Phi = \int_S B \quad (\text{magnetic flux}). \quad (1.1)$$

The quantum phase for a given  $\nu$  is characterized by a specific topological order of the ground state(s). The topological order is captured by the (possibly non-Abelian) generalized statistics of the topological defects (quasi-holes and quasi-particles) which may be inserted at given points  $\{w_k\}$  in the surface  $S$  where the electrons move. The generalized statistics of quasi-holes is the main object of interest in the theory of such phases.

In principle, the microscopic description of the system is provided by the Schroedinger equation governing the dynamics of the  $N$  electrons:

$$H|\psi\rangle = E_0|\psi\rangle. \quad (1.2)$$

The system is described in first quantization: the microscopic degrees of freedom entering in the Hamiltonian  $H$  are the positions  $z_i \in \mathbb{R}^2 \cong \mathbb{C}$  of the  $N$  electrons, their conjugate momenta  $p_i$ , and their discrete spin d.o.f.  $s_i$ . The precise details of the Hamiltonian  $H$  are unimportant: what matters is that the Hamiltonian under consideration belongs to the correct *universality class*. We say that two gapped Hamiltonians,  $H$  and  $H'$ , belong to the same *strict* universality class if their ground state(s) have the same topological order or, in more technical terms, iff we can find a continuous family of interpolating Hamiltonians  $H(t)$  for  $t \in [0, 1]$  such that

$$H(0) = H, \quad H(1) = H', \quad \text{and } H(t) \text{ is gapped for all } t \in [0, 1]. \quad (1.3)$$

The dependence of  $H$  on some continuous parameters is however interesting, even if their deformation does not close the gap and leaves the Hamiltonian in the same strict topological class. A basic example are the positions  $w_k \in \mathbb{R}^2$  where one inserts the defects. If we keep track of the dependence on these parameters in solving the Schroedinger equation (1.2), we may follow how the ground state(s) change when we take one defect around another, thus determining their generalized statistics. Morally speaking, the solution to (1.2) defines a connection on the space of defect configurations, and parallel transport along closed loops in this space defines the general statistics.<sup>1</sup> Then, out of the infinite-dimensional space of

---

<sup>1</sup>This is quite rough. In general, parallel transport defines a holonomy which depends on the actual loop, not just on its homotopy class. To get a cleaner definition of the generalized statistics one should be able to show that the relevant connection is flat, so that the generalized statistics coincides with its monodromy representation. The existence of a flat connection holds automatically in the Vafa context, and in facts it was one of the motivations for the proposal of [1].

possible deformations of the Hamiltonian  $H$ , all of which locally preserve the energy gap,<sup>2</sup> there is a finite-dimensional sub-space of deformations which may be used to probe the quantum order; the corresponding couplings are essential to understand the nature of the topological phase. All other couplings are pretty irrelevant, and we are free to deform them in any convenient way in order to make the analysis easier.

Thus, pragmatically, a microscopic description consists of a family of (gapped) Hamiltonians  $H(w_k)$  for the  $N$  electron system, where the  $w_k$  are the essential parameters which take value in some essential coupling space  $\mathcal{X}$ .  $H(w_k)$  is unique up to an equivalence relation given by arbitrary deformations of all inessential parameters while preserving the gap.

In a given FQHE topological phase, from the dynamics of the microscopic degrees of freedom there emerges at low-energy an effective 2d QFT  $\mathcal{Q}$  for the (non-local) quasi-hole “field” operators  $h(w)$ ; the topological phase is then captured by the braiding properties of their multi-point correlators

$$\langle h(w_1) h(w_2) \cdots h(w_n) \rangle_{\mathcal{Q}}, \tag{1.4}$$

as we transport the  $h(w)$ ’s around each other in closed loops. One of the goals of the theory is to understand the effective QFT of quasi-holes for a given value of the filling fraction  $\nu$ .

Starting from M-theory considerations, Vafa [1] puts forward the remarkable proposal that the relative universality class of Hamiltonian families which describes FQHE with given filling fraction  $\nu$  contains explicit families  $\{H(w)\}_{w \in \mathcal{X}}$  which are invariant under extended supersymmetry with four-supercharges (4-SUSY). As we review in section 3, this means that the action of the braid group  $\mathcal{B}_n$  on the topological defects  $h(w_j)$  coincides with the monodromy representation of the flat connection of the 4-SUSY supersymmetric Quantum Mechanics (SQM), and then the topological order of the FQHE system may be studied with the powerful tools of  $tt^*$  geometry [3–7].

The purpose of the present paper is to study the  $tt^*$  monodromy representation of the 4-SUSY SQM Hamiltonians which represent the FQHE relative universality classes, and determine the properties of their quantum topological phase. The observables one computes this way may potentially be tested in actual experiments in the laboratory.

Before going to that, in section 2 we argue from the first principles of Quantum Mechanics that the Vafa Hamiltonian is the physically correct one to describe many electrons, moving in a plane which interact with each other, in presence of a parametrically large magnetic field. ref. [1] discusses FQHE from several viewpoints besides the microscopic one based on the 4-SUSY SQM model, all of them inspired by M-/string theory consideration. The results of the effective approach in section 2 of [1] then constitute predictions of the results one is expected to obtain from the microscopic description (section 3 of [1]). In this paper we get full agreement with Vafa expectations: the way they arise from the microscopic theory looks quite elegant and deep from the geometrical side. We find that the 4-supercharge Hamiltonian proposed by Vafa describes FQHE for the following series

---

<sup>2</sup>Being gapped is an open condition in parameter space.

of filling fractions<sup>3</sup>  $\nu$ :

$\nu$		
$\frac{m}{2m\pm 1}$	$m \geq 1$	principal series
$\frac{m}{m+2}$	$m \geq 2$	Moore-Read-Rezayi series
$\frac{m}{2(m\pm 1)}$	$m \geq 3$ odd	
$\frac{m}{3m-2}$	$m \geq 2$	

(1.5)

Our results are “exact” in the sense that no asymptotic limit is implied: we do not assume any particular regime of the discrete or continuous parameters of the quantum model besides the defining assumption of the FQHE that the magnetic field  $B$  is parametrically large. Our computations do not rest on some approximation scheme, but on subtle general properties of  $tt^*$  geometry and some plausible assumption. While the geometric statements are beautiful, plausible, and supported by explicit examples, the arguments we present fall short of being proofs.

The bulk of the paper is devoted to the study of advanced topics in  $tt^*$  geometry required for the analysis of FQHE. Most of these developments have not appeared before in print, and some look rather surprising. In this direction there is still work to do.

The idea that the IR physics of some concrete physical system, actually realized in the laboratory — as the FQHE materials — does have a microscopic description in terms of a Lagrangian with extended supersymmetry may seem rather odd at first. In itself supersymmetry is not a problem since, for a gapped SUSY system, the supercharges just vanish in the IR sector. But *extended* supersymmetry is a subtler story. There are obvious obstructions to the uplift of the IR sector of a gapped quantum system to a 4-SUSY Hamiltonian model. We conclude this introduction by showing that these obstructions are avoided in the FQHE case. This is quite remarkable in its own right. In section 2 we shall give detailed arguments to the effect that the real-world microscopic FQHE Hamiltonian  $H_{\text{FQHE}}$  does have a *canonical* 4-SUSY uplift of the form proposed by Vafa.

**Obstructions to 4-susy uplift.** The Lagrangian of a 4-SUSY SQM is the sum of two pieces, called the  $D$ -term and the  $F$ -term. Couplings entering in the  $D$ -term are inessential for the IR sector, but there are finitely many  $F$ -term couplings which do are essential in the IR: they take value in some manifold<sup>4</sup>  $\mathcal{X}_{tt^*}$  (the  $tt^*$  manifold). Therefore, in order to have a 4-SUSY uplift, our quantum system should satisfy a necessary condition: its essential coupling space  $\mathcal{X}$  should match the  $tt^*$  one  $\mathcal{X}_{tt^*}$ . This is a formidable restriction since  $\mathcal{X}_{tt^*}$  is a very special kind of manifold: *a)* it is a complex analytic space, *b)* it admits a complete Kähler metric with a global Kähler potential, and *c)* if all infinitesimal deformations are unobstructed,  $\mathcal{X}_{tt^*}$  has the structure of a Frobenius manifold [8]. The fact that the essential parameters of FQHE satisfy all these peculiar conditions looks quite remarkable in itself, and gives confidence on the proposal put forward by Vafa. While this correspondence

<sup>3</sup>Warning: the table may contain repetitions, i.e. one  $\nu$  may appear more than once.

<sup>4</sup>Basic  $tt^*$  geometry is reviewed in section 3 below. In that section  $\mathcal{X}_{tt^*}$  is written simply  $\mathcal{X}$ .

may look quite unlikely at first, it is pretty natural from the M-theory perspective [1]. More direct physical arguments to believe Vafa’s supersymmetric picture is correct will be discussed in section section 2.

**Organization of the paper.** The paper is organized as follows: in section 2 we shall discuss the physics of the FQHE and present the reasons to believe in the 4-supercharges description. Here we fill in the details of various deep arguments sketched in section 3 of [1]. In section 3 we review the basics of  $tt^*$  geometry mainly to fix the language and notation. In section 4 we introduce a first block of new developments in  $tt^*$  geometry: here the focus is on the natural and deep interconnection between  $tt^*$  geometry and subjects like the Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov equation [9], (Iwanori-)Hecke algebras [11], the Gaudin integrable model [12] and all that. Section 5 contains a second block of special  $tt^*$  topics: here we consider the interplay between  $tt^*$  geometry and statistics from the viewpoint of  $tt^*$  functoriality, and connect these issues to the Heine-Stieltjes theory. In this section we also introduce the notion of  $tt^*$  dualities, i.e. correspondences between different looking quantum systems with four supercharges which have *identical*  $tt^*$  geometry (i.e. same brane amplitudes, metrics, new indices etc.). In section 6 the ideas developed in sections 4, 5 are applied to the Vafa model of FQHE to get the monodromy representation we look for. We present our conclusions in section 7.

## 2 The Vafa model vs. the microscopic physics of FQHE

The fractional quantum Hall effect arises from the quantum dynamics of a large number  $N$  of electrons moving in a two-dimension surface  $S$  subject to a strong external magnetic field  $B$ . In principle the quantum physics may be determined by solving the Schroedinger equation (1.2) for the many electron system. The actual Hamiltonian  $H$  contains a large number of degrees of freedom, it is involved and poorly known, so the direct approach from the microscopic side may seem totally hopeless. However, as far as the *only* observables we wish to compute from the Schroedinger equation (1.2) are the ones which control the topological order of the quantum phase, the problem becomes tractable under some mild assumptions.

### 2.1 Generalities

The basic assumption is that the strong magnetic field is really strong, so that there is a parametrically large energy-gap between the low-lying energy levels and the rest of the Hilbert space  $\mathbf{H}$ . More precisely, the Hamiltonian is assumed to have the schematic form

$$H = \sum_{i=1}^N \left( \frac{1}{2m} |\vec{p}_i - e \vec{A}(\vec{y}_i)|^2 + g \vec{B} \cdot \vec{\sigma}_i + \text{const} \right) + H_{\text{int}} \equiv H_B + H_{\text{int}} \quad (2.1)$$

where  $\vec{y}_i$  is the position of the  $i$ -th electron in the plane  $\mathbb{R}^2 \cong \mathbb{C}$  (we shall set  $z_i \equiv y_{i,1} + iy_{i,2}$ ),  $\vec{p}_i$  its conjugate momentum,  $\vec{\sigma}_i$  its spin d.o.f., and  $\vec{A}$  the background gauge field  $\nabla \times \vec{A} = \vec{B}$ . The interacting Hamiltonian  $H_{\text{int}}$  describes all other interactions; its crucial property is that

it is  $O(1)$  as  $B \rightarrow \infty$ . The additive constant in the large parenthesis is chosen so that the ground state energy vanishes.

We assume  $\nu \leq 1$ . Let  $\mathbf{H}_\Phi \subset \mathbf{H}$  be the subspace of the Hilbert space consisting of states whose energy is bounded in the limit  $B \rightarrow \infty$ ; the orthogonal complement  $\mathbf{H}_\Phi^\perp$  is separated from  $\mathbf{H}_\Phi$  by a large  $O(B)$  energy-gap. One has

$$\dim \mathbf{H}_\Phi = \binom{\Phi/2\pi}{N} = \binom{N/\nu}{N}. \tag{2.2}$$

Note that in  $\mathbf{H}_\Phi$  the electrons are polarized and the spin d.o.f. get frozen in their Clifford vacua. Thus, if we are only interested in the physics at energies  $\ll B/m$  we may forget these degrees of freedom. Acting on the vector space  $\mathbf{H}_\Phi$ , the operator  $H_B$  is identically zero; we are reduced to a quantum system with a finite-dimensional Hilbert space  $\mathbf{H}_\Phi$  with Hamiltonian  $H_{\text{eff}} = P_\Phi H_{\text{int}} P_\Phi$  where  $P_\Phi$  is the projection on  $\mathbf{H}_\Phi$ . The fact that  $\mathbf{H}_\Phi$  is finite-dimensional is not a significant simplification (unless  $\nu = 1$ ), since in realistic situations the dimension of the “small” space  $\mathbf{H}_\Phi$  is something like  $10^{10^{14}}$  and gets strictly infinite in the thermodynamic limit.

To proceed forward one needs new physical insights. In ref. [1] two novel ideas were proposed:<sup>5</sup>

1. the low-lying Hilbert space  $\mathbf{H}_\Phi$  is isomorphic to the space of supersymmetric vacua of a certain 4-SUSY SQM model;
2. the SQM system has a unique preferred vacuum  $|\text{vac}\rangle$  which is identified with the vacuum of the physical FQHE under the isomorphism in 1.

Our first goal is to flesh out the above two ideas in some detail.

## 2.2 Charged particles in magnetic fields $\equiv$ 4-supercharge SUSY

### 2.2.1 Electrons in a finite box with magnetic flux

To get a clean problem, we work in a finite box, i.e. we replace the plane  $\mathbb{C}$  in which the electrons move with a very large flat 2-torus  $E$ . The complex structure  $\tau$  on the elliptic curve  $E$  is immaterial in the infinite volume limit: we fix it to any convenient value. Also the spin structure is irrelevant; it is convenient to pick up an *even* one,<sup>6</sup>  $\mathcal{O}(S)$ , associated to a divisor  $S = p_0 - q$  where  $p_0, q \in E$  are distinct points which satisfy  $2p_0 = 2q$ . We are free to translate  $p_0 \in E$  according convenience.

In a holomorphic gauge,  $A_{\bar{z}} = 0$ , an Abelian gauge field  $A$  on  $E$  is determined by two data: *i*) a holomorphic line bundle  $\mathcal{L} \rightarrow E$  with Chern class  $c_1(\mathcal{L}) = \Phi/2\pi$ , where  $\Phi > 0$

<sup>5</sup>Cfr. the discussion at the end of section 3.3 in [1].

<sup>6</sup>*Notation and conventions:* 1)  $\Gamma(X, V)$  stands for the space of holomorphic sections of the coherent sheaf  $V$  on the complex space  $X$ .  $\mathcal{O}$  is the structure sheaf of  $X$  and  $\mathcal{M}$  the sheaf of germs of meromorphic functions. An asterisque denote the sub-sheaf of invertible elements of the given sheaf. 2) If  $D = \sum_i n_i p_i$  is a divisor on a *smooth* curve  $X$ , we fix a Cartier representative of it, i.e. we take a sufficiently fine open cover  $\{U_i\}$  of  $X$  and fix  $\psi_{0,i} \in \Gamma(U_i, \mathcal{M}^*)$  such that  $\psi_{0,i}/\psi_{0,j} \in \Gamma(U_i \cap U_j, \mathcal{O}^*)$ . We write  $\mathcal{O}(D)$  for the associated line bundle ( $\equiv$  invertible sheaf) with transition functions  $\psi_{0,i}/\psi_{0,j}$ . The *defining section*  $\psi_0$  of  $\mathcal{O}(D)$  is the one given by  $\psi_0|_{U_i} = \psi_{0,i}$ . We write  $\sim$  for linear equivalence of divisors.



is the magnetic flux through the surface  $E$ , and *ii*) a Hermitian metric  $h$  on the fibers of  $\mathcal{L}$ . Locally

$$eA_z = h^{-1}\partial_z h, \quad eA_{\bar{z}} = 0. \quad (2.3)$$

In such a holomorphic gauge, the low-lying wave functions  $\psi$  of the one-particle Hamiltonian<sup>7</sup>

$$H_{1\text{-par}} = \frac{1}{2m}|\vec{p}_i - e\vec{A}|^2 + \text{const} \quad (2.4)$$

are simply the holomorphic sections of the line bundle  $\mathcal{L}$  twisted by  $\mathcal{O}(S)$ ,

$$\mathbf{H}_{\Phi,1\text{-par}} = \Gamma(E, \mathcal{L}(S)), \quad \dim \mathbf{H}_{\Phi,1\text{-par}} = \deg \mathcal{L}(S) = \frac{\Phi}{2\pi}, \quad (2.5)$$

and for the  $N$  electron system

$$\mathbf{H}_{\Phi} = \bigwedge^N \Gamma(E, \mathcal{L}(S)), \quad \dim \mathbf{H}_{\Phi} = \binom{\Phi/2\pi}{N}. \quad (2.6)$$

In this gauge the low-lying wave-function  $\Psi$  are independent of  $h$ ; this does not mean that  $h$  is irrelevant for the low-energy physics, because the inner product in the space  $\mathbf{H}_{\Phi}$

$$\langle \Psi_1 | \Psi_2 \rangle = \int_E h^N \Psi_1^* \Psi_2 \, d\nu, \quad (2.7)$$

depends on  $h$ .

To be very explicit, we choose an effective divisor  $D = \sum_{i=1}^{\ell} n_i p_i$  such that  $\mathcal{L} = \mathcal{O}(D)$ . Then  $\mathcal{L}(S) = \mathcal{O}(D + S)$ . The divisor  $D + S$ , unique up to linear equivalence, has a defining meromorphic section  $\psi_0$  with a zero of order  $n_i \geq 1$  at each point  $p_i \in E$ , a simple zero at  $p_0$ , and no other zeros. In addition,  $\psi_0$  has a single pole at  $q$  and no other poles. Because of the pole  $\psi_0 \notin \Gamma(E, \mathcal{O}(D + S))$ .

The map  $\psi \mapsto \psi/\psi_0 \equiv \phi$  sets an isomorphism

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{H}_{\Phi,1\text{-par}} &\equiv \Gamma(E, \mathcal{O}(D + S)) \\ &\xrightarrow{\sim} \left\{ \phi \in \Gamma(E, \mathcal{M}) \text{ with polar divisor } D_{\infty} \leq D + p_0 \text{ vanishing at } q \right\}. \end{aligned} \quad (2.8)$$

Composing with the map<sup>8</sup>

$$\phi \longmapsto \left\{ z_1^{n_1} PP_{p_1}(\phi), z_2^{n_2} PP_{p_2}(\phi), \dots, z_{\ell}^{n_{\ell}} PP_{p_{\ell}}(\phi) \right\}, \quad (2.9)$$

we get the linear isomorphism

$$\mathbf{H}_{\Phi,1\text{-par}} \xrightarrow{\sim} \prod_{i=1}^{\ell} \mathbb{C}[z]/(z^{n_i}). \quad (2.10)$$

<sup>7</sup>We do not write the spin d.o.f. since their are frozen in their vacua.

<sup>8</sup>Here  $z_i$  is a local parameter at  $p_i \in E$ , and  $PP_p(\phi)$  stands for the *principal part* of the meromorphic function  $\phi$  at  $p \in E$ .

### 2.2.2 Magnetic system $\rightarrow$ 4-SUSY SQM: the linear isomorphism

On the other side of the correspondence, we consider a 4-SUSY SQM with a single chiral field  $z$  taking value in  $\mathcal{K} \equiv E \setminus \text{supp } F$ , where  $E$  is the elliptic curve on which the electrons move,  $dz$  is a holomorphic differential on  $E$ , and  $F$  an effective divisor.<sup>9</sup> We choose the one-particle superpotential<sup>10</sup>  $W(z)$  such that its derivative,  $W'(z)$ , is a meromorphic function on  $E$  whose zero-divisor  $D \equiv \sum_{i=1}^{\ell} n_i p_i$  is the one describing the magnetic background in which the electrons move. The polar divisor of  $W'(z)$  is  $F \sim D$ . In making the dictionary between the two quantum models, we use our freedom in the choice of  $p_0$  to set  $p_0 \in \text{Supp } F$ , i.e.  $p_0 \notin \mathcal{K}$ .

By the Chinese remainder theorem,<sup>11</sup> the chiral ring  $\mathcal{R}$  of this 4-SUSY model is

$$\mathcal{R} \cong \prod_{i=1}^{\ell} \mathbb{C}[z]/(z^{n_i}). \quad (2.11)$$

Comparing with (2.10) we get

$$\mathbf{H}_{\Phi, 1\text{-par}} \cong \mathcal{R}, \quad \mathbf{H}_{\Phi} \cong \bigwedge^N \mathcal{R} \quad (2.12)$$

as vector spaces. On the other hand, in a 4-SUSY theory we have a linear isomorphism between the chiral ring  $\mathcal{R}$  and the space  $\mathcal{V}$  of SUSY vacua [17, 20]. Composing the two we get a natural isomorphism between the low-lying states of the two quantum systems

$$\mathbf{H}_{\Phi, 1\text{-par}} \cong \mathcal{V}, \quad \mathbf{H}_{\Phi} \cong \mathcal{V}_N \equiv \bigwedge^N \mathcal{V}. \quad (2.13)$$

At the level of explicit Schroedinger wave-functions the isomorphism reads (for the one-particle theory)

$$\psi \mapsto \psi_{\text{susy}} \equiv \frac{\psi}{\psi_0} dW + \bar{Q}(\text{something}), \quad (2.14)$$

where in the r.h.s. we wrote the supersymmetric wave-functions as differential forms on  $\mathcal{K}$ , as it is customary [17, 21].  $\bar{Q}$  is a nilpotent supercharge,  $\bar{Q}^2 = 0$ , which acts in the Schroedinger representation as the differential operator [17]

$$\bar{Q} = \bar{\partial} + dW \wedge. \quad (2.15)$$

The space of SUSY vacua  $\mathcal{V}$  (and  $\mathcal{R}$ ) is isomorphic to the  $\bar{Q}$ -cohomology with  $L^2$ -coefficients.

Eq. (2.14) says that, up to a boring factor, the low-lying wave-functions for the original magnetic system and the ones for the 4-SUSY SQM models are identical in  $\bar{Q}$ -cohomology. To see that (2.14) is an isomorphism note that the elliptic function  $\psi/\psi_0$  is holomorphic for  $\psi \in \Gamma(E, \mathcal{O}(D+S))$  if and only if it is identically zero, that is, the r.h.s. of (2.14) is  $\bar{Q}$ -exact iff  $\psi = 0$ . The identification of the actual Schroedinger wave-functions on the two sides of the correspondence, if not fully canonical, is pretty natural.

<sup>9</sup>If  $\text{supp } F \neq \emptyset$ , the target space  $\mathcal{K}$  is Stein [16]. This ensures that the elements of the chiral ring  $\mathcal{R}$  may be represented (non-uniquely) by global holomorphic functions [17], see also *Hilfssatz C* in [18]. The results of the latter paper imply that these nice properties hold even when  $\dim \mathcal{R} = \infty$  (i.e. for *infinite* degree divisors) a fact we shall need in section 5.7.5 (for an exposition of these results, see section 26 of [19]).

<sup>10</sup>We stress that we require only the derivative  $W'$  to be univalued in  $\mathcal{K}$ , not the superpotential  $W(z)$  itself which is typically multivalued.

<sup>11</sup>We stress that the ring of holomorphic functions on a one-dimensional Stein manifold is a Dedekind domain. Then (say) Theorem 4 of [73] applies.

### 2.2.3 Motion in the plane

When the electron moves on  $\mathbb{C}$  instead of a torus, the corresponding 4-susy SQM is defined by a one-form  $dW$  which is a rational differential on  $\mathbb{P}^1$  with a pole of order  $\geq 2$  at  $\infty$

$$dW(z) = \frac{\prod_i (z - z_i)^{n_i}}{P(z)} dz, \quad D = \sum_i n_i z_i, \quad \deg P(z) \leq \sum_i n_i = \frac{\Phi}{2\pi}. \quad (2.16)$$

With this prescription on the behaviour at  $\infty$ , the scalar potential  $|W'|^2$  is bounded away from zero at infinity for all complete Kähler metrics on  $\mathbb{P}^1 \setminus \{\infty\}$ . This makes the quantum problem well-defined in the following senses:

- A. if we consider the 2d (2,2) Landau-Ginzburg model with superpotential  $W(z)$ , this condition guarantees the absence of run-away vacua;
- B. if we consider the 1d 4-susy SQM obtained by dimensional reduction from the above 2d model, it guarantees the presence of a finite energy-gap, and also normalizability of the vacuum wave-functions.

We mentioned both 2d and 1d models since the  $tt^*$  geometry is the same for the two theories [3], and it is convenient to pass from one language to the other, since some arguments are more transparent in 2d and some other in 1d.

The minimal regular choice is  $dW$  having a double pole at  $\infty$ ; we shall mostly focus on this case.<sup>12</sup> The same argument as in the torus geometry gives the linear isomorphism  $\mathbf{H}_\Phi \cong \mathcal{V}$  also in the plane. The magnetic flux is  $2\pi \deg D$ ,  $D$  being the zero divisor of  $dW$ . One writes the spin structure in the form  $\mathcal{O}(-q)$  for some reference point  $q \notin \text{Supp } D \cup \{\infty\}$ . The low-lying magnetic wave-functions are  $\psi \in \Gamma(\mathbb{P}^1, \mathcal{O}(D - q))$ ,  $\dim \Gamma(\mathbb{P}^1, \mathcal{O}(D - q)) = \Phi/2\pi$ .

In conclusion: for  $N$  non-interacting electrons in presence of a magnetic field, the low-lying Hilbert space is

$$\mathbf{H}_\Phi \cong \wedge^N \mathcal{R} \cong \mathcal{V}_N. \quad (2.17)$$

This is a mere linear isomorphism: the Hermitian structures on the two sides of the correspondence depend on additional data: in the original magnetic system on the fiber metric  $h$ , while in the 4-susy SQM on the detailed form of  $dW(z)$  which determines the ground-state Hermitian metric through the  $tt^*$  equations [3]. Our next task is to find the explicit form of  $dW(z)$  which best mimics the Hilbert structure of  $\mathbf{H}_\Phi$  for the magnetic system.

### 2.2.4 Comparing Hermitian structures on $\mathbf{H}_\Phi$

For simplicity, we consider a single electron moving in  $\mathbb{C} \equiv \mathbb{P}^1 \setminus \{\infty\}$  in presence of a strong magnetic field  $B$  macroscopically uniform along the surface. The extension to the case of  $N$  electrons is straightforward.

---

<sup>12</sup>The double pole at  $\infty$  just compensates the non-trivial canonical divisor  $K_{\mathbb{P}^1}$ , so effectively cancels the curvature of  $\mathbb{P}^1$ .

In the magnetic side, the Hermitian structure is defined by the fiber metric  $h = e^{-B|z|^2}$ , so that in a unitary gauge the low-level wave functions read

$$\psi(z)_{\text{uni}} = \psi(z)_{\text{holo}} e^{-B|z|^2/2} \quad B > 0. \quad (2.18)$$

In the 4-SUSY side we have the rational differential  $dW(z)$  with  $\Phi/2\pi$  zeros and a polar divisor of the form  $F = F_f + 2\infty$ . Generically, such a differential has the form

$$dW(z) = \left( \mu + \sum_{i=1}^{\Phi/2\pi} \frac{a_i}{z - \zeta_i} \right) dz, \quad F_f = \sum_i \zeta_i \quad (2.19)$$

with  $a_i \in \mathbb{C}^\times$  and  $\zeta_i \in \mathbb{C}$  all distinct.

An exact identification of the microscopic Hilbert space structures is a requirement a bit too strong. We content ourselves with equality after averaging over small but macroscopic domains  $U \Subset \mathbb{C}$ . In the present context  $U$  being *macroscopic* means  $\int_U B/2\pi \gg 1$ . This weaker condition is all we need if we are interested only in predicting long-wave observables of the kind which characterize the quantum topological order.

Let  $U \Subset \mathbb{C}$  be such a domain. For  $B$  and  $\mu$  large,

$$\frac{1}{2\pi} (\text{magnetic flux through } U) \approx \#(\text{SUSY classical vacua in } U) \approx \#\{\zeta_i \in U\}, \quad (2.20)$$

so a large macroscopically uniform  $B$  corresponds (non surprising) to a roughly homogeneous distribution in  $\mathbb{C}$  of the points  $\zeta_i$ ; the domain  $U$  is macroscopic iff it is much larger than the typical separation of the  $\zeta_i$ 's. After taking the  $\zeta_i$  to be regularly distributed in the plane, matching the Hermitian structures on the two sides of the correspondence boils down to fixing the residues  $a_i$  of  $dW$  so that the probability of finding the electron in the macroscopic domain  $U \Subset \mathbb{C}$  in the original magnetic system is the same as in the supersymmetric model.

It is clear that a homogenous field should correspond to the residues being all equal. By a rotation of the Grassman coordinates  $\theta$  we may assume the  $a_i$  to be all real.

In the magnetic system the probability of finding the electron at  $z$  is

$$|\psi(z)_{\text{uni}}|^2 = e^{-B|z|^2 + \text{subleading as } |z| \rightarrow \infty}. \quad (2.21)$$

The SUSY wave-functions have the form [17]

$$\psi_{\text{susy}} = \Phi(z) dz + \tilde{\Phi}(z) d\bar{z}, \quad (2.22)$$

and the probability distribution is

$$|\Phi(z)|^2 + |\tilde{\Phi}(z)|^2. \quad (2.23)$$

The two probabilities (2.21) and (2.23) should agree when averaged over a macroscopic region  $U$ . Let us give a rough argument suggesting that this holds iff  $a = \pm 1$ . We can choose a “real” basis of vacua such that the two terms in (2.23) are equal. Then eq. (2.21) yields

$$\log |\Phi(z)|^2 = -B|z|^2 + \text{subleading as } |z| \rightarrow \infty. \quad (2.24)$$

From the Schroedinger equation of the supersymmetric system, one has [17, 22]

$$\left( -\frac{\partial^2}{\partial \bar{z} \partial z} + \left| \frac{dW}{dz} \right|^2 \right) \frac{\Phi}{W'} = 0. \tag{2.25}$$

A possible large-field asymptotics consistent with this equation is

$$\Phi(z) = \exp\left(\pm 2 \operatorname{Re} W(z) + \text{subleading}\right), \quad \text{as } |z| \rightarrow \infty \tag{2.26}$$

provided the function in the r.h.s. *a)* is univalued in the large  $|z|$  region, and *b)* it goes to zero rapidly at infinity, so that  $\psi_{\text{susy}}$  has a chance to be normalizable. For a superpotential as in eq. (2.19) with  $a_i \in \mathbb{R}$  for all  $i$  the first condition holds

$$2 \operatorname{Re} W(z) = \mu z + \bar{\mu} \bar{z} + \sum_i a_i \log |z - \zeta_i|^2. \tag{2.27}$$

This function is the electrostatic potential of a system of point charges of size  $a_i$  at positions  $\zeta_i$  superimposed to a constant background electric field  $\bar{\mu}$ . When averaged over a macroscopic region  $U$ , it looks like the potential for a continuous charge distribution with density  $\sigma(z)$  such that

$$\int_U d^2 z \sigma(z) = \sum_{\zeta_i \in U} a_i, \quad \text{for all } U \subset \mathbb{C}. \tag{2.28}$$

Comparing eqs. (2.24), (2.26) we conclude that, for all macroscopic domain  $U \Subset \mathbb{C}$ , we have<sup>13</sup>

$$(\text{magnetic flux through } U) = \frac{i}{2} \int_U \bar{\partial} \partial \log |\Phi|^2 \approx \pm i \int_U \bar{\partial} \partial (2 \operatorname{Re} \mathcal{W}) = \mp 2\pi \sum_{\zeta_i \in U} a_i, \tag{2.29}$$

where in the last equality we used the Poisson equation of electrostatics.<sup>14</sup> Comparing eq. (2.29) with eq. (2.20), which also should be true for all macroscopic domain  $U$ , we get that either all  $a_i = -1$  or all  $a_i = +1$ , the two possibilities being related by a change of orientation. We fix conventions so that the external magnetic field is modelled in the SUSY side by (2.19) with  $a_i = -1$  for all  $i$ .

### 2.2.5 Introducing defects

From the SUSY side there is a natural way to introduce topological defects in the systems. One flips sign to a small number  $h$  of the residues  $a_i$ . Now there is a small mismatch between the number of vacua and the effective magnetic field as measured by the fall-off of the wave-function at infinity: we have two extra vacua per defect. The extra vacua are localized near the position of the corresponding defect in the plane and may be interpreted as “internal states” of the defect. We identify these defects with the quasi-holes of FQHE.

<sup>13</sup>To get the factors 2 right, recall that  $i dz \wedge d\bar{z} = 2 dx \wedge dy$  is *twice* the volume form on  $\mathbb{R}^2$ .

<sup>14</sup>Or the Poincaré-Lelong formula [23].

### 2.2.6 The Vafa superpotential emerges

We return to Schroedinger equation with Hamiltonian (2.1). In the large  $B$  limit, the low-energy physics is described by a quantum system with Hilbert space  $\mathbf{H}_\Phi$  and Hamiltonian  $\hat{H} \equiv P_\Phi H_{\text{int}} P_\Phi$ . Under the isomorphism discussed above, this system may be seen as a deformation of the 4-SUSY model with superpotential  $\mathcal{W}$  the sum of  $N$  copies of the above one-particle superpotential, i.e.  $\mathcal{W} = \sum_{i=1}^N W(z_i)$ . The additional terms in the Hamiltonian describe the interactions between the electrons. We can split these interactions in two groups: the ones which preserve supersymmetry and the ones which do not. The first ones may be inserted in the superpotential  $\mathcal{W}$  (or in the  $D$ -term, these ones being IR irrelevant). One is led to a superpotential of the form

$$d\mathcal{W} = \sum_{i=1}^N \left( dW(z_i) + \sum_{a=1}^h \frac{dz_i}{z_i - x_a} \right) + \sum_i U_i(z_1, \dots, z_N) dz_i \quad (2.30)$$

where  $dW(z_i)$  models the background magnetic field and  $x_a$  are the positions of the topological defects. As a function of the position  $z_i$  of the  $i$ -electron at fixed  $z_{j \neq i}$ , the meromorphic one-form  $U_i dz_i$  can have poles only when  $z_i = z_j$  for some  $j \neq i$ . Generically  $U_i dz_i$  has only simple poles (including at  $\infty$ ): we assume this to be the case. The residues are entire functions bounded at  $\infty$ , hence constants. Since  $\mathcal{W}$  must be symmetric under permutations of the electrons, the most general superpotential differential is

$$d\mathcal{W}(z_i; x_a) = \sum_{i=1}^N \left( dW(z_i) + \sum_{a=1}^h \frac{dz_i}{z_i - x_a} \right) + 2\beta \sum_{1 \leq i < j \leq N} \frac{d(z^i - z^j)}{z^i - z^j}, \quad (2.31)$$

for some complex constant  $\beta$ . The Vafa model [1] has a superpotential of this form. Ref. [1] proposes to model the magnetic field by

$$dW(z)_{\text{Vafa}} = - \sum_{k=1}^{\Phi/2\pi-h} \frac{dz}{z - \zeta_k}, \quad (2.32)$$

where  $\zeta_k$  are points forming some regular “lattice”. Working on the plane  $\mathbb{C}$  we prefer to add a constant contribution to  $dW(z)_{\text{Vafa}}$

$$dW(z) = dW(z)_{\text{Vafa}} + \mu dz, \quad \mu \neq 0, \quad (2.33)$$

in order to get the regularizing double pole at infinity (cfr. section 2.2.3). Note that the added term has no effect on the computations in section 2.2.4: indeed, it may be seen as an integration constant for the Poisson equation satisfied by the “electrostatic potential”  $2 \text{Re } \mathcal{W}$ .

### 2.2.7 The coupling $\beta$

In Vafa’s proposal the last term in eq. (2.31) models the most relevant part of the 2-electron interactions. In the electrostatic language, its real part is proportional to the electron-electron Coulomb potential. From the point of view of the 4-SUSY model with

target space  $\mathbb{C}$ , the coupling  $\beta$  may be any complex number. However,  $\beta$  gets quantized to a rational number when we study the model more carefully in a finite box  $E$  and we insist that the residues of  $d\mathcal{W}$  have the correct values in (2.31). In this case  $d\mathcal{W}$  is a meromorphic one-form in the Kähler space  $E^N$ ; its restriction to the  $i$ -th factor space at fixed  $z_j$  ( $j \neq i$ ) is a meromorphic one-form on the elliptic curve  $E$  with single poles of residue  $-1$  at the  $\zeta_k$ , residue  $+1$  at the  $x_a$ , and residue  $2\beta$  at the  $z_{j \neq i}$  and no extra pole at  $p_0$ . Since the total residue of a meromorphic one-form vanishes

$$0 = -\left(\frac{\Phi}{2\pi} - h\right) + h + 2\beta(N - 1) \approx (2\beta\nu - 1)\frac{\Phi}{2\pi}, \tag{2.34}$$

i.e., as  $N, \Phi \rightarrow \infty$ ,

$$2\beta = 1/\nu \in \mathbb{Q}_{>0} \tag{2.35}$$

which is the value given in ref. [1]. If (2.34) is (exactly) satisfied,  $d\mathcal{W}$  on  $E^N$  reads

$$d\mathcal{W} = \sum_{i=1}^N \left( \sum_a U(z_i; x_a) - \sum_k U(z_i; \zeta_k) + \frac{1}{\nu} \sum_{j \neq i} U(z_i; z_j) \right) \tag{2.36}$$

$$\text{where } U(z; w) \equiv \frac{\wp'(w/2) dz}{\wp(z - w/2) - \wp(w/2)}. \tag{2.37}$$

In ref. [1] the equality  $2\beta = 1/\nu$  was obtained by comparing the 4-SUSY brane amplitudes [13] in the (unphysical) asymmetric limit with the Laughlin phenomenological wavefunctions [24]. However that argument does not fix  $\beta$  unambiguously<sup>15</sup> since the superpotential is not univalued and one should go to a cover (see section 5.7); then the effective coupling  $\beta_{\text{eff}}$  appearing in the brane amplitudes is a “renormalized” version of the superpotential coupling  $\beta$  [3, 6, 7].

In the rest of this paper we shall work on the plane  $\mathbb{C}$  and keep  $\beta$  generic. We shall identify the filling fraction  $\nu$  with  $(2\beta_{\text{eff}})^{-1}$ .

### 2.3 Conclusion of the argument: emergence of a unique vacuum

Under the isomorphism of section 2.2.2 the many-body Hamiltonian (2.1) takes the form

$$H = H_{\mathcal{W}} + H_{\text{su.br.}} \tag{2.38}$$

where  $H_{\mathcal{W}}$  is the 4-SUSY Hamiltonian corresponding to the Vafa superpotential  $\mathcal{W}$  in eq. (2.31) (supplemented by an appropriate  $D$ -term) while  $H_{\text{su.br.}}$  contains the SUSY breaking interactions. For large magnetic fields the first term is  $O(B)$  while the second one is  $O(1)$ , and hence a small perturbation. However this does not mean that we are allowed to neglect  $H_{\text{su.br.}}$  when studying the quantum topological order of the FQHE system.  $H_{\text{su.br.}}$

---

<sup>15</sup>The brane amplitudes in the asymmetric limit have the general form  $\int_{\Gamma} e^{\mathcal{W}} \phi$  where  $\phi$  is a holomorphic  $N$ -form which represents the (cohomology class of) a SUSY vacuum. Clearly we are free to redefine  $\phi \rightarrow h\phi$  and  $\mathcal{W} \rightarrow \mathcal{W} - \log h$  for  $h$  a holomorphic function, leading to an ambiguity in reading the superpotential out of the integral  $\int_{\Gamma} e^{\mathcal{W}} \phi$ . *Remark:* knowing the set of allowed integration cycles  $\Gamma$  reduces (or eliminates) the ambiguity.

lifts the huge degeneration of the ground-states of  $H_{\mathcal{W}}$  producing a unique true vacuum  $|\text{vac}\rangle$ . The FQHE topological order is a property of this particular state.

We may formalize the situation as follows. The zero-energy eigenvectors of the supersymmetric Hamiltonian  $H_{\mathcal{W}}$  define a vacuum bundle over the space  $\mathcal{X}$  of couplings entering in the superpotential

$$\mathcal{V} \rightarrow \mathcal{X}, \quad \text{rank } \mathcal{V} = \begin{pmatrix} \Phi/2\pi \\ N \end{pmatrix}, \quad (2.39)$$

whose fiber  $\mathcal{V}_x$  is the space of SUSY vacua for the model with couplings  $x$ .  $\mathcal{V}$  is equipped with a flat connection  $\nabla$  extending the holomorphic Berry connection  $D$  (see next section). The quantum topological order of the supersymmetric model  $H_{\mathcal{W}}$  is captured by the monodromy representation of  $\nabla$ .

Switching on the interaction  $H_{\text{su.br.}}$  selects one vacuum  $|\text{vac}\rangle_x \in \mathcal{V}_x$ . The states  $|\text{vac}\rangle_x$  span the fibers of a *smooth* line sub-bundle

$$\mathcal{L} \subset \mathcal{V}. \quad (2.40)$$

$\mathcal{L}$  is endowed with two canonical sub-bundle connections,  $\nabla^{\text{vac}}$  and  $D^{\text{vac}}$ , inherited from  $\nabla$  and  $D$ , respectively. In general the sub-bundle curvature is quite different from the curvature of the original vector bundle; the discrepancy is measured by the torsion<sup>16</sup> [23, 31]

$$\mathcal{T}: \mathcal{L} \rightarrow \Lambda^1 \otimes \mathcal{V}/\mathcal{L}, \quad \mathcal{T}: \eta \mapsto \nabla\eta \text{ mod } \Lambda^1 \otimes \mathcal{L}. \quad (2.41)$$

Correspondingly, *a priori* the monodromy of  $\nabla^{\text{vac}}$  is neither well-defined nor simply related to the one of  $\nabla$ . *A priori* there is no simple relation between the quantum order of the FQHE Hamiltonian  $H$  and the quantum order of the SUSY model with Hamiltonian  $H_{\mathcal{W}}$ . In order to have a useful relation two “miracles” should occur:

- M1:** the monodromy representation  $\mathcal{V}$  of the flat connection  $\nabla$  should be reducible with an invariant sub-bundle  $\widetilde{\mathcal{L}} \subset \mathcal{V}$  of rank 1. Then the 4-SUSY SQM has a unique *preferred* vacuum which spans the fiber  $\widetilde{\mathcal{L}}_x$  of the line sub-bundle;
- M2:** the physical FQHE vacuum  $|\text{vac}\rangle$  is mapped by the isomorphism in section 2.2.2 to the preferred vacuum of “miracle” **M1** (up to corrections which vanish as  $B \rightarrow \infty$ ). In other words,  $\mathcal{L} = \widetilde{\mathcal{L}}$ .

Whether **M1** happens or not is purely a question about the supersymmetric model  $H_{\mathcal{W}}$ . The question may be phrased as asking whether  $H_{\mathcal{W}}$  has a unique preferred vacuum. Ref. [1] suggests that such a preferred vacuum exists and is the spectral-flow<sup>17</sup> of the identity operator. While this sounds as a natural guess, it is certainly not true that in a general  $tt^*$  geometry the spectral-flow of the identity spans a monodromy invariant subspace of  $\mathcal{V}$ . That **M1** holds for the special class of 4-SUSY models (2.31) appears to be a genuine miracle.

<sup>16</sup>*Notations:* in this paper  $\Lambda^k$  stands for the space of smooth  $k$ -forms, while  $\Omega^k$  for the space of holomorphic ones. We use the same symbols for the corresponding sheaves.

<sup>17</sup>See section 3 for a review of the spectral-flow isomorphism.



The validity of **M2** then rests on the fact that the preferred vacuum — if it exists at all — is bound to be the most symmetric one. Then one may argue as follows [1]: as long as the SUSY breaking interaction  $H_{\text{su.br.}}$  is symmetric under permutations of electrons/quasi-holes, translations and rotations, the true vacuum  $|\text{vac}\rangle$  will also be the (unique) maximal symmetric one.

The conclusion is that — under our mild assumptions — the quantum order of the FQHE is captured by the 4-SUSY SQM model proposed in [1].

### 3 Review of basic $tt^*$ geometry

We review the basics of  $tt^*$  geometry in a language convenient for our present purposes. Experts may skip to the next section.

#### 3.1 4-supercharge LG models: vacua and branes

Even if  $tt^*$  geometry is much more general, we describe it in a specific context, namely Landau-Ginzburg (LG) models with four supercharges (4-SUSY). By a (family of) LG models we mean the following data: a Stein manifold<sup>18</sup>  $\mathcal{K}$  and a family of non-degenerate holomorphic functions

$$\mathcal{W}(z; x): \mathcal{K} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}, \quad z \in \mathcal{K} \quad x \in \mathcal{X}, \quad (3.1)$$

parametrized holomorphically by a connected complex manifold  $\mathcal{X}$  of “coupling constants”<sup>19</sup>  $x$ . *Non-degenerate* means that, for all  $x \in \mathcal{X}$ , the set of zeros of the differential<sup>20</sup>  $d\mathcal{W}(z; x)$  is discrete in  $\mathcal{K}$ ; for technical reasons it is also convenient to assume that the square-norm of the differential  $\|d\mathcal{W}(z; x)\|^2$  is bounded away from zero outside a (large) compact set (cfr. section 2.2.3).

In the LG model the coordinates<sup>21</sup>  $z$  of  $\mathcal{K}$  are promoted to chiral superfields, and we have a family of Lagrangians of the form

$$\mathcal{L}_x = \int d^4\theta K + \left( \int d^2\theta \mathcal{W}(z; x) + \text{h.c.} \right), \quad x \in \mathcal{X}. \quad (3.2)$$

The details of the  $D$ -terms are immaterial for us; we only need that there *exists* some Kähler potential  $K$  yielding a complete Kähler metric: this is guaranteed since  $\mathcal{K}$  is Stein.<sup>22</sup>

Out of the data  $(\mathcal{K}, \mathcal{W})$  we can construct two related 4-SUSY LG theories: a two-dimensional (2d) (2, 2) QFT and a one-dimensional 4-supercharges supersymmetric Quantum Mechanical (SQM) system, the latter being the dimensional reduction of the first one by compactification on a circle  $S^1$ . The physics of the two situations is quite different (e.g.

<sup>18</sup>For properties of the Stein spaces see [23, 25–27]. We recall that: 1) a non-compact Riemann surface [19] is automatically Stein [16]; 2) all affine varieties are Stein.

<sup>19</sup>It is often convenient to see the  $x$ 's as a fixed background of additional chiral superfields.

<sup>20</sup> $d$  is the exterior derivative in  $\mathcal{K}$ . It acts trivially on the constant couplings  $x$ .

<sup>21</sup>In a Stein manifold, in the vicinity of each point there is a complex coordinate system made of *global* holomorphic functions [25–27]. I.e. we may choose the chiral fields  $z$ 's so that they are well-defined quantum operators.

<sup>22</sup> $K: \mathcal{K} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  may be chosen to be a global exhaustion [25–27].

mirror symmetry [28] holds only in 2d), but the  $tt^*$  geometries of the two theories are identical [3, 29]. Thus, in studying the  $tt^*$  geometry we may use the quantum-mechanical and the field-theoretical language interchangeably. Some aspects of the geometry may be physically obvious in one language but not in the other. Hence, while most of the literature uses the 2d perspective, in this paper we feel free to change viewpoint according convenience. Of course, the universality class of FQHE is described by the SQM LG model.

The Hilbert space  $\mathbf{H}$  of the SQM model is the space of differential forms on  $\mathcal{K}$  with  $L^2$ -coefficients [17, 21]. The Lagrangian  $\mathcal{L}_x$  is invariant under a supercharge  $\bar{Q}_x$  which acts on forms as

$$\bar{Q}_x \psi = \bar{\partial} \psi + dW(z; x) \wedge \psi. \quad (3.3)$$

$\bar{Q}_x$  is obviously nilpotent,  $\bar{Q}_x^2 = 0$ , and it commutes with multiplication by holomorphic functions. The vacuum vector space

$$\mathcal{V}_x := \left\{ \psi \in \mathbf{H} : \bar{Q}_x \psi = \bar{Q}_x^\dagger \psi = 0 \right\} \subset \mathbf{H} \quad (3.4)$$

is isomorphic to the cohomology of  $\bar{Q}_x$  in  $\mathbf{H}$ . Under the present assumptions, the vacuum space  $\mathcal{V}_x$  consists of primitive forms of degree  $N \equiv \dim_{\mathbb{C}} \mathcal{K}$  [17]. In particular, the vacua are invariant under the Lefschetz R-symmetry  $SU(2)_R$  [23].  $d \equiv \dim \mathcal{V}_x$  is the Witten index [30], invariant under continuous deformations of  $x \in \mathcal{X}$  such that  $\|dW\|^2$  remains bounded away from zero outside a large compact set  $C \Subset \mathcal{K}$ . The cohomology of  $\bar{Q}_x$  in the space of operators acting on  $\mathbf{H}$  is called the *chiral ring*  $\mathcal{R}_x$ . A simple computation [17] yields<sup>23</sup>

$$\mathcal{R}_x = \Gamma(\mathcal{K}, \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{K}}/\mathcal{J}_x) \stackrel{\text{Stein}}{=} \Gamma(\mathcal{K}, \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{K}})/\Gamma(\mathcal{K}, \mathcal{J}_x) \quad (3.5)$$

where  $\mathcal{J}_x \subset \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{K}}$  is the sheaf of ideals whose stalks are generated by the germs of the partials  $\partial_{z^i} \mathcal{W}(z; x)$ . In the present framework,  $\mathcal{R}_x$  is a finite-dimensional, commutative, associative, unital  $\mathbb{C}$ -algebra which in addition is Frobenius, i.e. endowed with a *trace map*  $\langle - \rangle_x: \mathcal{R}_x \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$  such that  $\langle \phi_1 \phi_2 \rangle_x$  is a non-degenerate bilinear form on  $\mathcal{R}_x$ . From the definitions we have an obvious linear isomorphism (the “spectral flow”) [20]

$$\varkappa: \mathcal{R}_x \cong \mathcal{V}_x, \quad \varkappa: \phi \mapsto \phi dz^1 \wedge \cdots \wedge dz^N + \bar{Q}_x \eta_x \quad (3.6)$$

which in the 2d context can be understood as the state-operator correspondence for the Topological Field Theory (TFT) obtained by twisting the physical model [3, 28]. Eq. (3.6) extends to an isomorphism of  $\mathcal{R}_x$ -modules. The Frobenius bilinear form (the topological two point function in the 2d language) is [17]<sup>24</sup>

$$\langle \phi_1 \phi_2 \rangle_x = \int_{\mathcal{K}} \varkappa(\phi_1) \wedge * \varkappa(\phi_2). \quad (3.7)$$

A direct computation of the r.h.s. [17] shows that the trace form is the Grothendieck residue [23] of  $\phi_1 \phi_2$  with respect to the regular sequence of the partials  $\{\partial_{z_1} \mathcal{W}, \dots, \partial_{z_N} \mathcal{W}\}$ .

<sup>23</sup>Here and below  $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{K}}$  denotes the structure sheaf of the complex manifold  $\mathcal{K}$ .

<sup>24</sup>Note that, as  $\varkappa(\phi_a)$  are primitive  $N$ -forms, the r.h.s. does not depend on the chosen Kähler metric in virtue of the Riemann bilinear relations [23, 31].

As a matter of notation, we shall write  $\langle \phi |$  for the vacuum state whose wave-function is  $\varkappa(\phi)$  which we write as a bra. We stress that in our conventions  $\langle \phi |$  is  $\mathbb{C}$ -linear in  $\phi$ , not anti-linear.

Eq. (3.6) implies that  $tt^*$  geometry is functorial with respect to (possibly branched) holomorphic covers<sup>25</sup>  $f: \mathcal{K}' \rightarrow \mathcal{K}$  [3] a property that will be crucial in section 5 below.

Let  $\zeta \in \mathbb{P}^1$  be a twistor parameter, and consider the smooth function

$$F(z, \bar{z}; \zeta) = \text{Re}(\mathcal{W}(z; x)/\zeta + \overline{\mathcal{W}}(\bar{z}; \bar{x})\zeta) \tag{3.8}$$

Morse cobordism<sup>26</sup> implies the isomorphism [13]

$$\mathcal{V}_x \cong H^*(\mathcal{K}, \mathcal{K}_{x;\zeta}; \mathbb{C}) \quad \zeta \in \mathbb{P}^1, \tag{3.9}$$

where  $H^*(\mathcal{K}, \mathcal{K}_{x;\zeta}; \mathbb{C})$  denotes the relative cohomology<sup>27</sup> with complex coefficients, and

$$\mathcal{K}_{x;\zeta} := \left\{ z \in \mathcal{K} : F(z, \bar{z}; \zeta) > \Lambda \right\} \subset \mathcal{K} \tag{3.10}$$

for some sufficiently large<sup>28</sup> constant  $\Lambda$ . The dual relative homology  $H_*(\mathcal{K}, \mathcal{K}_{x;\zeta}; \mathbb{C})$  is called the space of *branes*, because in 2d the corresponding objects have the physical interpretation of half-BPS branes [13]; the twistor parameter  $\zeta$  specifies which linear combinations of the original 4 supercharges leave the brane invariant. The space of branes has an obvious integral structure given by homology with integral coefficients

$$\mathcal{V}_x^\vee \cong H_*(\mathcal{K}, \mathcal{K}_{x;\zeta}; \mathbb{Z}) \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{C}. \tag{3.11}$$

An integral basis of  $H_*(\mathcal{K}, \mathcal{K}_{x;\zeta}; \mathbb{Z})$  may be explicitly realized by special Lagrangian submanifolds of  $\mathcal{K}$  and, more specifically, by Lefschetz thimbles describing the gradient flow of  $F(z, \bar{z}; \zeta)$  for generic  $\zeta$  [13]. By abuse of notation, we write  $|\alpha; \zeta\rangle_x$ , ( $\alpha = 1, \dots, d$ ) for such an integral basis. Let  $\{\phi_i\}$  ( $i = 1, \dots, d$ ) be a basis of  $\mathcal{R}_x$ ; we write  $\{\langle \phi_i | \}$  for the corresponding basis  $\{\varkappa(\phi_i)\}$  of  $\mathcal{V}_x$ . We may form the *non-degenerate*  $d \times d$  matrix

$$\Psi(x; \zeta)_{i\alpha} = \langle \phi_i | \alpha; \zeta \rangle_x \tag{3.12}$$

called the *brane amplitudes*.  $\Psi(x; \zeta)_{i\alpha}$  is not uni-valued as a function of  $\zeta$  due to the Stokes phenomenon [5] (and, in the 2d language, the related issue of BPS wall-crossing).

### 3.2 $tt^*$ geometry

On the coupling space  $\mathcal{X}$  we have the vacuum vector bundle  $\mathcal{V}$

$$\begin{array}{ccc}
 0 \longrightarrow \mathcal{V} & \longrightarrow & \mathbf{H} \times \mathcal{X} & \text{exact row,} \\
 & \searrow & \downarrow & \\
 & & \mathcal{X} & 
 \end{array} \tag{3.13}$$

<sup>25</sup>If  $\mathcal{K}$  is Stein,  $\mathcal{K}'$  is automatically also Stein [25].

<sup>26</sup>See e.g. Theorem 3.9 in [32].

<sup>27</sup>The space  $H^*(\mathcal{K}, \mathcal{K}_{x;\zeta}; \mathbb{C})$  is non-zero only in degree  $N$ .

<sup>28</sup> $\Lambda$  should be larger than the image of all critical values of  $\mathcal{W}$ .

namely the sub-bundle of the trivial Hilbert bundle  $\mathbf{H} \times \mathcal{X}$  whose fiber  $\mathcal{V}_x$  is the vacuum space (3.4) for the model with couplings  $x \in \mathcal{X}$ . The differential operator  $\overline{Q}_x$  depends holomorphically on  $x$  (cfr. eq. (3.3)); then the isomorphism

$$\mathcal{V}_x \cong \ker \overline{Q}_x / \text{im } \overline{Q}_x, \tag{3.14}$$

implies that the bundle  $\mathcal{V} \rightarrow \mathcal{X}$  is holomorphic. The vacuum Berry connection, i.e. the sub-bundle connection on  $\mathcal{V}$  induced by the trivial connection on  $\mathbf{H} \times \mathcal{X}$ , is then both metric and holomorphic. There is a unique such connection, the Chern one [23], whose (1,0) and (0,1) parts are respectively

$$D = \partial + g\partial g^{-1} \quad \text{and} \quad \overline{D} = \overline{\partial}, \tag{3.15}$$

where  $g$  is the  $tt^*$  (Hermitian) metric matrix [3]

$$g_{i\bar{j}} = \int_{\mathcal{K}} \varkappa(\phi_i) \wedge * \overline{\varkappa(\phi_j)}. \tag{3.16}$$

Clearly, the (2,0) and (0,2) parts of the vacuum Berry curvature vanish

$$D^2 = \overline{D}^2 = 0. \tag{3.17}$$

We have a canonical (holomorphic) sub-bundle  $\mathcal{R}$  of  $\text{End}(\mathcal{V})$ :

$$\begin{array}{ccccc}
 0 & \longrightarrow & \mathcal{R} & \longrightarrow & \text{End}(\mathcal{V}) & \text{exact row,} \\
 & & & \searrow & \downarrow & \\
 & & & & \mathcal{X} & 
 \end{array} \tag{3.18}$$

whose fiber  $\mathcal{R}_x$  is the chiral ring of the theory with coupling  $x$ . Spectral-flow (or 2d topological twist) then yields the bundle isomorphism  $\mathcal{R} \cong \mathcal{V}$ . Note that  $tt^*$  geometry defines *two* (distinct) natural Hermitian metrics on  $\mathcal{V}$ : the one induced by the monomorphism  $\mathcal{V} \hookrightarrow \mathbf{H} \times \mathcal{X}$  and the one induced by  $\mathcal{V} \cong \mathcal{R} \hookrightarrow \text{End}(\mathcal{V}) \hookrightarrow (\mathbf{H} \otimes \mathbf{H}) \times \mathcal{X}$ .

A superpotential  $\mathcal{W}$  produces a (1,0)-form  $C$  on  $\mathcal{X}$  with coefficients in  $\mathcal{R}$ , i.e.

$$C := [\partial_{x^i} \mathcal{W}]_x dx^i \in \Gamma(\mathcal{X}, \mathcal{R} \otimes \Omega^1) \subset \Gamma(\mathcal{X}, \text{End}(\mathcal{V}) \otimes \Omega^1), \tag{3.19}$$

where  $[\phi]_x$  stands for the class of the holomorphic function  $\phi$  in  $\mathcal{R}_x$  (cfr. (3.5)). Since we are free to add to  $\mathcal{W}(z; x)$  a  $x$ -dependent constant, we may assume without loss that the coefficients of  $C$  belong to the trace-less part of  $\text{End}(\mathcal{V})$ .  $C$  is manifestly nilpotent, and both holomorphic and covariantly-closed [3]

$$C \wedge C = \overline{D}C = DC = 0. \tag{3.20}$$

We write  $\overline{C}$  for the (0,1)-form which is the Hermitian conjugate of  $C$  with respect to the metric (3.16).  $\overline{C}$  satisfies the conjugate of relations (3.20). It remains to specify the (1,1) part of the curvature of the Berry connection; one gets [3]

$$D\overline{D} + \overline{D}D + C \wedge \overline{C} + \overline{C} \wedge C = 0. \tag{3.21}$$

Eq. (3.17), (3.20) and (3.21) are the  $tt^*$  equations [3]. They are integrable [5, 33] and, in fact most (possibly all) integrable systems reduce to special instances of  $tt^*$  geometry. For  $\zeta \in \mathbb{P}^1$  one considers the (non-metric!) connection on the vacuum bundle  $\mathcal{V} \rightarrow \mathcal{X}$

$$\nabla^{(\zeta)} = D + \frac{1}{\zeta}C, \quad \bar{\nabla}^{(\zeta)} = \bar{D} + \zeta\bar{C} \tag{3.22}$$

The  $tt^*$  equations can be neatly summarized in the statement that this connection is flat identically in the twistor parameter  $\zeta$

$$(\nabla^{(\zeta)})^2 = (\bar{\nabla}^{(\zeta)})^2 = \nabla^{(\zeta)}\bar{\nabla}^{(\zeta)} + \bar{\nabla}^{(\zeta)}\nabla^{(\zeta)} = 0 \quad \text{for all } \zeta \in \mathbb{P}^1. \tag{3.23}$$

Hence the linear system (called the  $tt^*$  Lax equations)

$$\nabla^{(\zeta)}\Psi(\zeta) = \bar{\nabla}^{(\zeta)}\Psi(\zeta) = 0 \tag{3.24}$$

is integrable for all  $\zeta$ . A fundamental solution to (3.24) is a  $d \times d$  matrix  $\Psi(\zeta)$  whose columns are linearly independent solutions, i.e. a basis of linear independent flat sections of  $\mathcal{V}$ . A deeper interpretation of the  $tt^*$  Lax equations as describing  $\zeta$ -holomorphic sections of hyperholomorphic bundles in hyperKähler geometry may be found in ref. [7].

Given a fundamental solution  $\Psi(\zeta)$  we may recover the  $tt^*$  metric  $g$ . This is best understood by introducing the *real structure* (compatible with the rational structure induced by the branes) [3, 5, 33]

$$\overline{\Psi(1/\bar{\zeta})} = g^{-1}\Psi(\zeta). \tag{3.25}$$

**Remark.** Jumping slightly ahead, we observe that when the chiral ring is semi-simple (section 3.5) we may choose as an integral basis of branes the Lefschetz thimbles which originate from the (non-degenerate) critical points of  $\mathcal{W}$  [13]. In this case (for a certain canonical basis of  $\mathcal{R}$  defined in section 3.5) one has [3, 5, 33]

$$\Psi(\zeta)\Psi(-\zeta)^t = 1 \tag{3.26}$$

where one should think of the r.h.s. as the topological metric  $\eta$  in the canonical basis. Hence

$$g = \Psi(\zeta)\Psi(-1/\bar{\zeta})^\dagger. \tag{3.27}$$

The interpretation of eqs. (3.26)(3.27) is that the brane spaces  $H_*(\mathcal{K}, \mathcal{K}_{x,\zeta})$  and  $H_*(\mathcal{K}, \mathcal{K}_{x,-\zeta})$  are each other dual (with respect to the natural intersection pairing<sup>29</sup>) and both the topological and  $tt^*$  metrics can be written in terms of the Lefschetz intersection pairing. This observation will be useful to clarify the  $tt^*$ -theoretical origin of most constructions in the theory of braid group representations [11].

---

<sup>29</sup>This is Lefschetz duality.

### 3.3 The $tt^*$ monodromy representation

Let  $\Psi(\zeta)_{(\gamma)}$  be the analytic continuation of the fundamental solution  $\Psi(\zeta)$  along a closed curve  $\gamma \in \mathcal{X}$  in coupling space. Both  $\Psi(\zeta)$  and  $\Psi(\zeta)_{(\gamma)}$  solve the  $tt^*$  Lax equations at  $x \in \mathcal{X}$ , hence there must be an invertible matrix  $\varrho(\gamma)_\zeta$  such that

$$\Psi(\zeta)_{(\gamma)} = \Psi(\zeta) \varrho_\zeta(\gamma). \tag{3.28}$$

This produces a representation

$$\varrho_\zeta: \pi_1(\mathcal{X}) \rightarrow \text{GL}(d, \mathbb{C}), \tag{3.29}$$

which is independent of the particular choice of the fundamental solution  $\Psi(\zeta)$  modulo conjugacy in  $\text{GL}(d, \mathbb{C})$ .

**Claim.** *We may conjugate the representation  $\varrho_\zeta$  in  $\text{GL}(d, \mathbb{C})$  so that it lays in the arithmetic subgroup  $\text{SL}(d, \mathbb{Z})$ .*

To show the claim, we have to exhibit a preferred fundamental solution which has a canonical  $\mathbb{Z}$ -structure. This is provided by the branes. It is easy to check that the brane amplitudes (3.12) are a particular fundamental solution to the  $tt^*$  Lax equation [13]. This may be understood on general grounds: since the branes with given  $\zeta \in \mathbb{P}^1$  have well-defined *integral* homology classes, for each  $\zeta \in \mathbb{P}^1$  they define a local system on  $\mathcal{X}$  canonically equipped with a flat connection, the Gauss-Manin one. Dually, the branes define a  $\mathbb{P}^1$ -family of flat connections on  $\mathcal{Y}$  which is naturally identified with the  $\mathbb{P}^1$ -family of  $tt^*$  Lax connections  $\nabla^{(\zeta)}, \bar{\nabla}^{(\zeta)}$ .

The parallel transport along the closed loop  $\gamma$  should map a brane into a linear combination of branes with integral coefficients [13]. Then the matrix  $\varrho_\zeta(\gamma)$  in (3.28) and its inverse  $\varrho_\zeta(\gamma)^{-1} \equiv \varrho_\zeta(\gamma^{-1})$  should have integral entries, which entails  $\det_\zeta \varrho(\gamma) = \pm 1$ . The negative sign is not allowed.<sup>30</sup>

Since the entries of  $\varrho_\zeta(\gamma)$  are integers, they are locally independent of  $\zeta$ . The brane amplitudes are multivalued on the twistor sphere; going from one determination to another the representation  $\varrho_\zeta(-)$  gets conjugated in  $\text{SL}(d, \mathbb{Z})$ . Then, modulo conjugation, the  *$tt^*$  monodromy representation*

$$\varrho: \pi_1(\mathcal{X}) \rightarrow \text{SL}(d, \mathbb{Z}) \tag{3.30}$$

is independent of  $\zeta$ . By the same token, the conjugacy class of  $\varrho$  is also invariant under continuous deformation of the parameters  $x$ , i.e. changing the base point  $* \in \mathcal{X}$  we use to define  $\pi_1(\mathcal{X})$  will not change the conjugacy class of  $\varrho$  (of course, this already follows from the properties of the fundamental group).

The  $tt^*$  equations (3.17), (3.20), (3.21) then describe the possible deformations of the coefficients of the flat connection  $\nabla^{(\zeta)}, \bar{\nabla}^{(\zeta)}$  which leave the monodromy representation  $\varrho$  invariant, i.e. they are the equations of an *isomonodromic problem*. In the special case

---

<sup>30</sup>If we normalize  $C$  to be traceless (as we are free to do), it follows from eq. (3.22) that the function  $\det \Psi(\zeta) / \det g \equiv \det \Psi(\zeta) / |\det \eta|$  is constant in  $\mathcal{X}$ . In special coordinates (which always exist [8])  $\eta$  is a constant, so  $\det \Psi(\zeta)$  is also a constant with these canonical choices.

that the chiral rings  $\mathcal{R}_x$  ( $x \in \mathcal{X}$ ) are *semi-simple* ( $\equiv$  the 2d (2,2) model is gapped) the  $tt^*$  isomonodromic problem is equivalent to the Miwa-Jimbo-Sato one [34–41], see ref. [4] for the detailed dictionary between the two subjects.

At the opposite extremum we have the situation in which  $\mathcal{R}_x$  is a *local ring* for all  $x \in \mathcal{X}$ . In this case the 2d (2,2) model is superconformal, and  $\mathcal{X}$  is its conformal manifold; the  $tt^*$  geometry is equivalent to the Variations of Hodge Structure (VHS) in the sense of Griffiths [31] and Deligne [42], see ref. [29] for a precise dictionary between the two geometric theories. In the particular case of Calabi-Yau 3-folds the VHS is called “special geometry” [43] in the string literature.

For a generic superpotential  $\mathcal{R}_x$  is automatically semi-simple.<sup>31</sup> The locus in  $\mathcal{X}$  where  $\mathcal{R}_x$  is not semi-simple is an analytic subspace, hence it has<sup>32</sup> real codimension at least 2; therefore, for all element  $[\gamma] \in \pi_1(\mathcal{X})$ , we may find a representative closed path  $\gamma$  which avoids the non-semi-simple locus, that is, we may effectively replace  $\mathcal{X}$  with the open dense subspace where  $\mathcal{R}_x$  is semi-simple.

### 3.4 $\mathcal{R}_x$ local

For completeness, we briefly mention the situation for  $\mathcal{R}_x$  local, even if the main focus of this paper is the semi-simple case. Historically,  $tt^*$  geometry was created [3, 29] on the model of VHS, thinking of it as a “mass deformation” of VHS which holds even off-criticality. Hodge theory provides a good intuition about the properties of  $tt^*$  geometry, and many Hodge-theoretical arguments may be extended to the wider  $tt^*$  context. Typical massive (2,2) systems have a UV fixed point which is a regular SCFT, whose  $tt^*$  geometry is described by VHS. In this case VHS geometry supplies the boundary condition needed to specify the particular solution of the massive  $tt^*$  PDEs which corresponds to the given physical system: the correct solution is the one which asymptotes to the VHS one as the radius  $R$  of the circle on which the 2d theory is quantized is sent to zero [3, 5, 44].

### 3.5 $\mathcal{R}_x$ semi-simple

We recall some useful facts about semi-simple chiral rings. A commutative semi-simple  $\mathbb{C}$ -algebra of dimension  $d$  is the product of  $d$  copies of  $\mathbb{C}$ . Hence there is a complete system of orthogonal idempotents  $e_i$  ( $i = 1, \dots, d$ ) which span the algebra  $\mathcal{R}_x$  and have a very simple multiplication table<sup>33</sup>

$$e_i e_j = \delta_{ij} e_i, \quad 1 = e_1 + e_2 + \dots + e_d. \tag{3.31}$$

Explicitly,  $e_i$  represents the class of holomorphic functions on  $\mathcal{K}$  with value 1 at the  $i$ -th zero of  $d\mathcal{W}$  and 0 at the other critical points (such functions exist since  $\mathcal{K}$  is Stein). The Frobenius bilinear pairing has the form

$$\eta_{ij} := \langle e_i e_j \rangle = \delta_{ij} \langle e_i \rangle \quad \langle e_i \rangle \neq 0. \tag{3.32}$$

---

<sup>31</sup> $\mathcal{R}_x$  is semi-simple iff, for all  $z \in \mathcal{K}$ , the stalks  $(\mathcal{J}_x)_z$  of the sheaf  $\mathcal{J}_x \subset \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{K}}$  are either the trivial ideal, i.e.  $(\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{K}})_z$ , or a maximal ideal  $\mathfrak{m}_z \subset (\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{K}})_z$ . Then the coherent sheaf  $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{K}}/\mathcal{J}_x$  is a skyscraper with support on the (isolated) zeros of  $d\mathcal{W}$ , the stalk at a zero being  $\mathbb{C}$ . Therefore  $\mathcal{R}_x \equiv \Gamma(\mathcal{K}, \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{K}}/\mathcal{J}_x) \cong \prod_{v \in \text{sup } \mathcal{J}_x} (\mathbb{C})_v$ .

<sup>32</sup> Assuming that  $\mathcal{X}$  is not contained in that locus, as it is the case for the models of interest in this paper.

<sup>33</sup> In refs. [3, 5] the basis  $\{e_i\}$  of  $\mathcal{R}_x$  was called the “point basis”.

We write

$$E_i = \langle e_i \rangle^{-1/2} e_i \quad i = 1, \dots, d. \tag{3.33}$$

The basis  $\{\langle E_i \rangle\}$  of  $\mathcal{V}_x$  yields the *canonical* (holomorphic) trivialization of  $\mathcal{V}$ ; the *natural* trivialization is the one associated to the non-normalized basis  $\{\langle e_i \rangle\}$ . The canonical trivialization is convenient since it makes the  $tt^*$  equations model-independent and the connection with the isomonodromy PDEs transparent. But it has a drawback: the sign of the square-root in (3.33) has no canonical determination. Going along a non-trivial loop in coupling space we may come back with the opposite sign. The unification comes at the price of a sign conundrum: getting the signs right in the present matter is a well-known headache. To simplify our lives, we often study sign-insensitive quantities, such as squares, and be content if they have the correct properties, without bothering to fix the troublesome signs.

Since  $\langle E_i E_j \rangle = \delta_{ij}$ , in the canonical trivialization we do not need to distinguish upper and lower indices. The reality constraint [3] implies that the canonical  $tt^*$  metric

$$G_{i\bar{j}} := \langle E_j | E_i \rangle \in \text{SO}(d, \mathbb{C}) \cap \text{Her}(d)_+, \tag{3.34}$$

$\text{Her}(d)_+$  being the set of positive-definite  $d \times d$  Hermitian matrices. In the canonical trivialization the Berry connection

$$A := g \partial g^{-1} \in \mathfrak{so}(d) \otimes \Omega^1(\mathcal{X}) \tag{3.35}$$

is anti-symmetric  $A^t = -A$ .

Since  $\{e_i\}$  form a basis of  $\mathcal{R}$ , we have

$$[\mathcal{W}(z; x)]_x = \sum_{i=1}^d w_i e_i, \tag{3.36}$$

for certain functions  $w_i : \mathcal{X} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ . The  $\{w_i\}$ 's are the critical values of  $\mathcal{W}(z; x)$ . The map  $w : \mathcal{X} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^d$  given by  $x \mapsto (w_1(x), \dots, w_d(x))$  is a local immersion. In fact, the  $w_i$  form a local coordinate system on the Frobenius manifold of all couplings of the TFT [8, 33] which contains the physical coupling space  $\mathcal{X}$  as a submanifold.<sup>34</sup> We write  $\mathcal{X}^\circ \subset \mathcal{X}$  for the dense open domain<sup>35</sup> in which  $\mathcal{R}_x$  is semi-simple and

$$i \neq j \quad \Rightarrow \quad w_i \neq w_j. \tag{3.37}$$

Equivalently,  $\mathcal{X}^\circ$  is the domain in which the function  $\mathcal{W}$  is strictly Morse.

Let  $\mathcal{E} := w^i \partial_{w^i}$  be the Euler vector in  $\mathcal{X}$ ; the anti-symmetric matrix

$$Q := i_{\mathcal{E}} A, \tag{3.38}$$

---

<sup>34</sup>In general it is a submanifold of positive codimension. Consider e.g. the 2d  $\sigma$ -model with target  $\mathbb{P}^n$  with  $n > 1$ . Higher powers of the Kähler form are elements of the chiral ring and their 2-form descendents can be added to the TFT action. Adding them to the physical action would spoil UV completeness. The corresponding phenomenon in the  $tt^*$  geometry is that the solutions to the PDEs become singular for  $R$  small enough, i.e. at some large (but finite) energy scale.

<sup>35</sup>The qualification in footnote 32 applies here too.



is called the *new index* [44]. In 2d (2,2) models  $Q_{ij}$  plays two roles. First [5, 44] it is the index capturing the half-BPS solitons in  $\mathbb{R}$  which asymptote the  $i$ -th (resp.  $j$ -th) classical vacuum as  $x \rightarrow -\infty$  (resp.  $+\infty$ )

$$Q_{ij} = \lim_{L \rightarrow \infty} \frac{i\beta}{2L} \text{Tr}_{(i,j)} [(-1)^F F e^{-\beta H}], \tag{3.39}$$

where the theory is quantized in a strip of width  $L$  with boundary conditions the classical vacua  $i, j$  on the two boundary components. From (3.39) one learns<sup>36</sup> that the matrix  $Q$  is Hermitian. Second [3] it is a generalization of Zamolodchikov  $c$ -function [45] since  $Q_{ij}$  is stationary only at fixed points of the RG flow, where the eigenvalues of  $Q_{ij}$  become the  $U(1)_R$  charges of the Ramond vacua of the fixed point (2,2) SCFT<sup>37</sup> which determine the conformal dimension of the chiral primaries and, in particular the Virasoro central charge  $c$ .

The new index is a central object in  $tt^*$  geometry also in 1d, where the above physical interpretations do not hold. Indeed, the full  $tt^*$  geometry may be described in terms of the matrix  $Q$  only as we now review.

We warn the reader that in the rest of this subsection the convention on the sum over repeated index does not apply.

**Lemma** (see [4, 33]). *Let  $\mathcal{R}_x$  be semi-simple. The Berry connection in the canonical holomorphic gauge is antisymmetric with off-diagonal components*

$$A_{kl} := Q_{kl} \frac{d(w_k - w_l)}{w_k - w_l}. \tag{3.40}$$

The  $tt^*$  equations may be written as a pair of differential equations for  $Q_{kl}$  [33]. The first one expresses the fact that the (2,0) part of the curvature vanishes

$$\partial Q_{kl} \wedge u_{kl} + \sum_h Q_{kh} Q_{hl} u_{kh} \wedge u_{hl} = 0, \tag{3.41}$$

where the symbol  $u_{kl}$  stands for the Arnold form [46] in configuration space

$$u_{kl} := \frac{d(w_k - w_l)}{w_k - w_l}. \tag{3.42}$$

The other equation for  $Q$  is obtained by contracting (3.21) with  $\mathcal{E}$

$$-\bar{\partial}Q + [\mathcal{W}]_x \bar{C} - \bar{C} [\mathcal{W}]_x = 0. \tag{3.43}$$

### 3.6 Computing the monodromy representation

We study the  $tt^*$  monodromy representation  $\varrho$ , eq. (3.30), for  $\mathcal{R}_x$  generically semi-simple.

Since  $tt^*$  is an isomonodromic problem we are free to continuously deform the model in coupling constant space  $\mathcal{X}$ ; the only effect is to get matrices  $\varrho(\gamma)$  which possibly differ by an irrelevant overall conjugation. In particular, the eigenvalues of the monodromy matrices

$$\left\{ \varrho(\gamma), \quad \gamma \in \pi_1(\mathcal{X}) \right\} \tag{3.44}$$

<sup>36</sup>The statement is less elementary than it sounds.

<sup>37</sup>If the 2d (2,2) model is asymptotically free the statement requires some specification, see [5].

(which are algebraic numbers of degree at most  $d$ ) and the dimension of their Jordan blocks are invariant under any *finite* continuous deformation.

However, typically, to really simplify the computation we need to take the limit to a point at infinite distance in parameter space, i.e. a point in the closure  $\mathcal{X}^\circ$  of the “good” space. In this case the limiting monodromy may be related by a singular conjugation to the original one. The eigenvalues of the monodromy matrices  $\rho(\gamma)$  are continuous in the limit but the Jordan blocks may decompose into smaller ones.<sup>38</sup> This happens, for instance, when we take the UV limit of an asymptotically free model (see [5]).

Therefore, monodromy eigenvalues are typically easy to compute, while the Jordan structure is subtler. However in many situations we know *a priori* that the monodromy matrix is semi-simple and so we do not lose any information. In the case relevant for the FQHE, when  $\pi_1(\mathcal{X})$  is a complicated non-Abelian group, the Jordan blocks are severely restricted by the group relations, so it is plausible that they can be recovered from the knowledge of the eigenvalues.

There are three obvious limits in which the computation is expected to simplify; in the  $tt^*$  literature they are called: *i*) the IR limit, *ii*) the asymmetric limit [6, 13], and *iii*) the UV limit. In a related math context *ii*) is called the homological approach and *iii*) the CFT approach [47].

The IR and asymmetric approaches are widely known and used [5, 6, 13, 48]. They essentially reduce to the combinatorics of 2d wall-crossing [5, 13] (equivalently, of 1d BPS instantons [49]). The UV approach seems less known, and we are not aware of a good reference for it, so we shall develop it in some detail in section 3.6.2 below. Of course, the three approaches yield equivalent monodromy representations (at least when we have a good UV point as in the CFT context) and this statement summarizes many results in the math literature. From this point of view, the wall-crossing formulae are consistency conditions required for the monodromy representation, as computed in the IR/homological approach, to be a well-defined invariant of the UV fixed-point theory.

We briefly review the asymmetric approach for the sake of comparison.

### 3.6.1 Asymmetric approach (homological)

One starts by rescaling the critical values

$$\omega^i \rightarrow R w^i \tag{3.45}$$

where  $R$  is some positive real number.<sup>39</sup> The  $tt^*$  flat connection becomes

$$\nabla^{(\zeta)} = D + \frac{R}{\zeta} C, \quad \bar{\nabla}^{(\zeta)} = \bar{D} + \zeta R \bar{C} \tag{3.46}$$

and the Berry curvature

$$F = -R^2 [C, \bar{C}]. \tag{3.47}$$

---

<sup>38</sup>Having a determinate spectrum is a closed condition in the matrix space, while the having a Jordan block of size  $> 1$  is open.

<sup>39</sup>In the context of the 2d (2,2) LG model quantized in a cylinder,  $R$  is identified with the radius of the cylinder [3]. Alternatively,  $R$  is the 2d inverse temperature if we look to the path integral on the cylinder as the theory quantized on the line at finite temperature  $R^{-1}$ .

Then one takes the unphysical limit  $R \rightarrow 0$  with  $R/\zeta$  fixed and large. The Berry curvature vanishes in the limit, so the metric connection  $A$  is pure gauge. The  $tt^*$  linear problem (3.24) then (formally!) reduces to

$$\left( \partial_{w^i} + A_i + \frac{R}{\zeta} e_i \right) \Psi = \bar{\partial} \Psi = 0. \tag{3.48}$$

A solution to this equation, asymptotically for  $R/\zeta$  large, is

$$\Psi(w)_{i\alpha} = \int_{\Gamma_\alpha} E_i(z) e^{-R\mathcal{W}(z;w)/\zeta} dz^1 \wedge \dots \wedge dz^n, \tag{3.49}$$

where the cycles  $\Gamma_\alpha$  are the supports of an integral basis of branes, say Lefschetz thimbles, and  $E_i(z)$  holomorphic functions representing the rescaled unipotents  $E_i$  in the chiral ring. Computing the r.h.s. by the saddle point method, one checks that it is indeed a fundamental solution to (3.48).

The homology classes of the branes (with given  $\zeta$ ) are locally constant in coupling constant space  $\mathcal{X}$ , but jump at loci where (in the 2d language) there are BPS solitons which preserve the same two supercharges as the branes. The jump in homology at such a locus is given the Picard-Lefschetz (PL) transformation [5, 13, 50, 51]. Taking into account all the jumps in homology one encounters along the path (controlled by the 2d BPS spectrum), one gets the monodromy matrix which is automatically integral of determinant 1. The full monodromy representation is given by the combinatorics of the PL transformations.

Dually, instead of the action of the monodromy group on the homology of branes we may consider its action in the cohomology of the (possibly multivalued) holomorphic  $n$ -forms

$$E_i(z) e^{-R\mathcal{W}(z;w)/\zeta} dz^1 \wedge \dots \wedge dz^n. \tag{3.50}$$

The method is conceptually clear and often convenient. On the other side, the fact that we consider a limit which do not correspond to any unitary quantum system tends to make the physics somewhat obscure. For our present purposes the UV approach seems more natural.

### 3.6.2 The UV approach (“CFT”)

This is the physical UV limit of the 2d model. Again one makes the redefinition (3.45) and sends the length scale  $R \rightarrow 0$ . But now  $\zeta$  is kept fixed at its original value, which may be a unitary one  $|\zeta| = 1$ . From eq. (3.46) we see that in this limit the flat connection reduces to the Berry one

$$\nabla^{(\zeta)} + \bar{\nabla}^{(\zeta)} \xrightarrow{R \rightarrow 0} D + \bar{D}. \tag{3.51}$$

The Berry connection then becomes flat in the limit, as eq. (3.47) indeed shows. Since the monodromy of the flat connection  $\nabla^{(\zeta)} + \bar{\nabla}^{(\zeta)}$  is independent of  $R$ , the flat UV Berry connection should have the same monodromy modulo the subtlety with the size of the Jordan blocks mentioned after eq. (3.44).

While the monodromy matrices  $\varrho(\gamma)$  as computed in the asymmetric (or IR) approach are manifestly *integral*, the monodromy matrices  $\varrho^b(\gamma)$  computed in the UV approach are manifestly *unitary* (since the Berry connection is metric).

This observation is a far-reaching generalization to the full non-Abelian  $tt^*$  monodromy representation  $\varrho: \pi_1(\mathcal{X}) \rightarrow \mathrm{SL}(d, \mathbb{C})$  of the formula for the relation between the 2d quantum monodromy as computed in the UV and in the IR, i.e. for the monodromy representation of the Abelian subgroup  $\mathbb{Z} \subset \pi_1(\mathcal{X})$  associated to the overall phase of the superpotential  $\mathcal{W}$  [5]

$$\overbrace{e^{2\pi i \mathbf{Q}}}^{\text{UV monodromy}} \xleftrightarrow{\text{same spectrum}} \overbrace{(S^{-1})^t S}^{\text{IR monodromy}} \tag{3.52}$$

where  $\mathbf{Q}$  is the  $U(1)_R$  charge acting on the Ramond vacua of the UV fixed point SCFT and  $S$  is the integral Stokes matrix of the  $tt^*$  Riemann-Hilbert problem [5]

$$|S_{ij} + S_{ji}| = 2 \delta_{ij} + \#\left\{ \text{2d BPS solitons connecting vacua } i \text{ and } j \right\}. \tag{3.53}$$

Instead the Jordan block structure is, in general, different between the two sides of the correspondence (3.52) as the examples in ref. [5] illustrate.

In particular,

**Corollary.** *The integral monodromy matrices  $\varrho(\gamma)$  realizing the Picard-Lefschetz homological monodromy on thimbles are quasi-unipotent.*

This statements implies but it is much stronger than the strong monodromy [5].<sup>40</sup> Indeed arithmetic subgroups of  $\mathrm{SL}(d, \mathbb{Z})$  such that the spectrum of all elements consists of roots of unity have a very restricted structure.

To give an explicit description of the UV Berry connection  $\varrho^b$  we need additional details on  $tt^*$  geometry which we are going to discuss.

## 4 Advanced $tt^*$ geometry I

To compute the monodromy representation of the Vafa model in the UV approach we need a more in-depth understanding of  $tt^*$  geometry. A first block of advanced  $tt^*$  topics is discussed in this section. Most material is either new or presented in a novel perspective. The crucial issue is the notion of a *very complete  $tt^*$  geometry*.

What makes the UV approach so nice is its relation to the Kohno connections [52–55] in the theory of the braid group representation [11, 56]. Flatness with respect to a Kohno connection may be seen as a generalization of the Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov equations [9].

In this section we go through the details of this beautiful relation. Since some statement may sound a bit unexpected to the reader, we present several explicit examples.

### 4.1 $tt^*$ monodromy vs. the universal pure braid representation

Following the strategy outlined in section 3.6.2, we rescale  $w^i \rightarrow R w^i$  and send  $R \rightarrow 0$  (note that if  $w^i \in \mathcal{X}$  also  $R w^i \in \mathcal{X}$  for all  $R > 0$ , so the limiting point indeed lays in

---

<sup>40</sup>The strong monodromy theorem is the same statement but restricted to a special element of the monodromy group, i.e. the quantum monodromy. The corollary claims that the property extends to the full group.

the closure  $\overline{\mathcal{X}}$  of the semi-simple domain). As we approach a fixed point of the RG flow the element  $[\mathcal{W}]_x \in \mathcal{R}_x$  becomes a multiple of the identity operator [4, 5] and eq. (3.43) implies  $\bar{\partial}Q \rightarrow 0$ . Since  $Q$  is Hermitian,  $\partial Q \rightarrow 0$  as well, so that  $\lim_{R \rightarrow 0} Q$  is a constant matrix. Naively, to get the UV Berry connection we just replace this constant matrix in the the basic  $tt^*$  formula (3.40). However, this is not the correct way to define the  $R \rightarrow 0$  limit. The point is that the canonical trivialization becomes too singular in the UV limit: the chiral ring  $\mathcal{R}$  is believed to be regular (even as a Frobenius algebra) in the UV limit but, since the limit ring is no longer semi-simple, its generators are related to the canonical ones by a singular change of basis. A trivialization which is better behaved as  $R \rightarrow 0$  is the natural one. We write  $\mathbf{A}$  for the natural gauge connection. Starting from eq. (3.40), and performing the diagonal gauge transformation, we get

$$\mathbf{A}_{kl} = h_k Q_{kl} h_l^{-1} \frac{d(w_k - w_l)}{w_k - w_l} - \delta_{kl} d \log h_l \tag{4.1}$$

where  $h_l = \langle e_l \rangle^{1/2}$ . Taking the limit  $R \rightarrow 0$ , the second term in the r.h.s. of (4.1) becomes (locally) a meromorphic one-form  $f_{l,i}(w_j) dw_i$  invariant under  $w_j \rightarrow w_j + c$  and  $w_j \rightarrow \lambda w_j$  with at most single poles when  $w_l = w_j$  for some  $l \neq j$ . In addition, its contraction with the Euler vector  $\mathcal{E}$  has no poles. Thus as  $R \rightarrow 0$  the Berry connection  $\mathcal{D} \equiv D + \bar{\partial}$  should locally take the form

$$\mathcal{D} = d + \sum_{1 \leq i < j \leq n} B_{ij} \frac{d(w_i - w_j)}{w_i - w_j} \tag{4.2}$$

where the entries of the matrix  $B_{ij}$  are holomorphic functions of the  $w_k - w_l$  homogeneous of degree zero. They should produce the correct quantum monodromy (3.52), so that

$$\exp \left[ 2\pi i \sum_{i < j} B_{ij} \right] = \exp \left( 2\pi i \mathbf{Q} \right) \quad \text{up to conjugacy} \tag{4.3}$$

where  $\mathbf{Q}$  is the same matrix as in eq. (3.52) but now written in a different basis which makes it symmetric trace-less.

The simplest solution to these conditions is given by constant  $B_{ij}$  matrices. However, the  $B_{ij}$  cannot be just constant in general; indeed the matrices  $B_{ij}$  are restricted by a more fundamental condition i.e. that the connection (4.2) is flat

$$\mathcal{D}^2 = 0, \tag{4.4}$$

how predicted by the  $tt^*$  equations. Note that this constraint on  $B_{ij}$  arises from setting to zero the (2,0) part of the curvature, which vanishes for all  $R$ .

## 4.2 Complete and very complete $tt^*$ geometries

Let  $\mathcal{X}$  be the essential coupling space of a 4-SUSY LG model with Witten index  $d$ . We write  $\mathring{\mathcal{X}} \subset \mathcal{X}$  for the open domain (assumed to be non-empty and connected) in which the superpotential is a Morse function.<sup>41</sup>

---

<sup>41</sup>In this sub-section we use the term “Morse function” in the strong sense i.e. all critical points are non-degenerate and the critical values  $w_k$  are all distinct.

### 4.2.1 Configuration spaces

The configuration space  $\mathcal{C}_d$  of  $d$  ordered distinct points in the plane is

$$\mathcal{C}_d := \left\{ (w_1, w_2, \dots, w_d) \in \mathbb{C}^d \mid w_i \neq w_j \text{ for } i \neq j \right\}. \quad (4.5)$$

The cohomology ring  $H^*(\mathcal{C}_d, \mathbb{Z})$  is the ring in the  $\binom{d}{2}$  generators

$$\omega_{ij} = \omega_{ji} = \frac{1}{2\pi i} \frac{d(w_i - w_j)}{w_i - w_j} \quad (4.6)$$

subjected to the  $\binom{d}{3}$  relations [46]

$$\omega_{ij} \wedge \omega_{jk} + \omega_{jk} \wedge \omega_{ki} + \omega_{ki} \wedge \omega_{ij} = 0. \quad (4.7)$$

The fundamental group  $\mathcal{P}_d = \pi_1(\mathcal{C}_d)$  is called the *pure braid group on  $d$  strings*.

The configuration space of  $d$  *unordered* distinct points is the quotient space

$$\mathcal{Y}_d = \mathcal{C}_d / \mathfrak{S}_d. \quad (4.8)$$

Its fundamental group  $\mathcal{B}_d = \pi_1(\mathcal{Y}_d)$  is the (*Artin*) *braid group in  $d$  strings* [11]. It is an extension of the symmetric group  $\mathfrak{S}_d$  by the pure braid group

$$1 \rightarrow \mathcal{P}_d \xrightarrow{\iota} \mathcal{B}_d \xrightarrow{\beta} \mathfrak{S}_d \rightarrow 1. \quad (4.9)$$

$\mathcal{B}_d$  has a presentation with  $d - 1$  generators  $g_i$  ( $i = 1, \dots, d - 1$ ) and relations

$$g_i g_{i+1} g_i = g_{i+1} g_i g_{i+1}, \quad g_i g_j = g_j g_i \text{ for } |i - j| \geq 2. \quad (4.10)$$

### 4.2.2 (Very) complete $tt^*$ geometries

The critical value map

$$w: \mathcal{X} \rightarrow \mathcal{Y}_d, \quad x \mapsto \{w_1, \dots, w_d\} \quad (4.11)$$

is a holomorphic immersion by definition of “essential” couplings. We say that the  $tt^*$  geometry is *complete* if, in addition,  $w$  is a submersion, hence a covering map. The notion of completeness is akin to the one for 4d  $\mathcal{N} = 2$  QFTs [57, 58]; in particular, the 2d correspondent [59] of a 4d complete theory has a complete  $tt^*$  geometry in the present sense. Equivalently, we may say that a  $tt^*$  geometry is complete iff it is defined over the full Frobenius manifold  $\mathcal{X}_{\text{Frob}}$  of the associated TFT [8].<sup>42</sup> Completeness is a strong requirement.

---

<sup>42</sup>In general the perturbations of the model by elements of the chiral ring,  $L \rightarrow L + (\epsilon \int d^2\theta \phi + \text{h.c.})$ ,  $\phi \in \mathcal{R}$  are “obstructed” in the sense that the coupling is UV relevant and the perturbed theory develops Landau poles. In this case the TFT theory is still well-defined, but the  $tt^*$  metric gets singular for  $R$  less than a certain critical values  $R_c$  (from the formulation of  $tt^*$  in terms of integral equations, it is clear that a smooth solutions always exists for large enough [33], but nothing prevents a singularity to appear at finite  $R$ ). In practice, the  $tt^*$  being complete means that all chiral “primary” operators are IR relevant or marginal non-dangerous.

The category of coverings of  $\mathcal{Y}_d$  is equivalent<sup>43</sup> to the category  $\mathcal{B}_d$ -sets. We say that a complete  $tt^*$  geometry is *very complete* iff the action of  $\mathcal{B}_d$  on the  $\mathcal{B}_d$ -set  $S$  which corresponds to the cover  $\mathcal{X}^\circ \rightarrow \mathcal{Y}_d$  factors through the map  $\beta$  in (4.9) or, equivalently, if the canonic projection  $p: \mathcal{C}_d \rightarrow \mathcal{Y}_d$  factors through the critical-value map  $w$

$$\begin{array}{ccc}
 & \xrightarrow{p} & \\
 \mathcal{C}_d & \xrightarrow{\quad} & \mathcal{X}^\circ \xrightarrow{w} \mathcal{Y}_d
 \end{array} \tag{4.12}$$

In this case we may view  $\mathcal{C}_d$  as the coupling space on which it acts a group of “ $S$ -dualities” given by the deck group of the cover  $\mathcal{C}_d \rightarrow \mathcal{X}^\circ$ . We may pull-back the vacuum bundle  $\mathcal{V} \rightarrow \mathcal{X}^\circ$  to a bundle over  $\mathcal{C}_d$ , which we denote by the same symbol  $\mathcal{V}$ , and consider the  $tt^*$  geometry on the configuration space  $\mathcal{C}_d$ .

In a very complete  $tt^*$  geometry, pulled back to  $\mathcal{C}_d$ , the local expression (4.2) becomes global, since in this case the  $w_i$  are global coordinates and the partials  $\partial_{w_i} \mathcal{W}$  define a global trivialization of the bundle  $\mathcal{R} \rightarrow \mathcal{C}_d$ .

In the very complete case the entries of the matrices  $B_{ij}$  are holomorphic functions on  $\mathcal{C}_d$ , homogenous of degree zero and invariant under overall translation, which satisfy (4.3). Assuming the r.h.s. of that equation to be well-defined (we take this as part of the definition of *very complete*), the matrices  $B_{ij}$  should be constant. They are further constrained by the flatness condition  $\mathcal{D}^2 = 0$ . This leads to the theory of Kohno connections [52, 53] that we briefly review.

**Remark.** An especially important class of very special  $tt^*$  geometries are the *symmetric* ones; in this case the  $d \times d$  matrices  $B_{ij}$  satisfy

$$(B_{\pi(i)\pi(j)})_{\pi(k)\pi(l)} = (B_{ij})_{kl} \quad \text{for all } \pi \in \mathfrak{S}_d. \tag{4.13}$$

This holds automatically when the map  $w$  in eq. (4.12) is an isomorphism.

### 4.2.3 Kohno connections

In the very complete case the flat UV Berry connection  $\mathcal{D}$  has the form (4.2) with  $B_{ij}$  constant  $d \times d$  matrices. We recall the

**Lemma** (see e.g. [52–54]). *Let  $\mathcal{D} = d + \mathcal{A}$  be a connection of the general form (4.2) where  $B_{ij}$  are constant  $d \times d$  matrices. Then  $\mathcal{D}$  is flat if and only if the following relations hold*

$$[B_{ij}, B_{ik} + B_{jk}] = [B_{ij} + B_{ik}, B_{jk}] = 0 \quad \text{for } i < j < k, \tag{4.14}$$

$$[B_{ij}, B_{kl}] = 0 \quad \text{for distinct } i, j, k, l. \tag{4.15}$$

Eqs. (4.14), (4.15) are called the infinitesimal pure braid relations. A connection of the form (4.2) where the constant matrices  $B_{ij}$  satisfy the relations (4.14), (4.15) is called a rank- $d$  Kohno connection.

---

<sup>43</sup>See e.g. section II.2.9 of [60].

A rank- $d$  Kohno connection defines a representation of the pure braid group  $\mathcal{P}_d$  in  $d$  strings

$$\sigma: \mathcal{P}_d \rightarrow \mathrm{GL}(d, \mathbb{C}) \tag{4.16}$$

via parallel transport with the connection  $\mathcal{D}$  on the configuration space  $\mathcal{C}_d$

$$\sigma: \mathcal{P}_d \ni [\gamma] \mapsto P \exp \left( - \int_{\gamma} \mathcal{A} \right) \in \mathrm{GL}(d, \mathbb{C}). \tag{4.17}$$

The family of representations  $\sigma$  parametrized by the matrices  $B_{ij}$  satisfying the infinitesimal pure braid relations is called the *universal monodromy* [53]. If, in addition, eq. (4.13) holds the connection  $\mathcal{D}$  descends to a flat connection on a suitable bundle  $\mathcal{V} \rightarrow \mathcal{Y}_d$  and yields a universal monodromy representation of the full braid group  $\mathcal{B}_d$  [52–54].

We conclude:

**Fact 1.** *For a very complete  $tt^*$  geometry the UV Berry monodromy representation  $\varrho^b$  is the universal monodromy representation of the pure braid group  $\mathcal{P}_d$  in  $d$  string specialized to the Khono matrices  $B_{ij}$  computed from the grading of the UV chiral ring  $\mathcal{R}_{UV}$  in superconformal  $U(1)_R$  charges. If, in addition, the  $tt^*$  geometry is symmetric the UV Berry monodromy representation extends to a representation of the full braid group  $\mathcal{B}_d$ .*

The condition of being very complete is really very restrictive for a  $tt^*$  geometry. So, to convince the reader that we are not concerned with properties of the empty set, we present a few examples. They will be used later to illustrate various aspects of the theory.

### 4.3 First examples of very complete $tt^*$ geometries

We omit example 0, the free (Gaussian) theory. Note that its superpotential  $W(z)$  satisfies the ODE  $(d_z W(z))^2 = a W(z) + b$ .

**Example 1.** All massive models with Witten index 2 are trivially very complete. The simplest instance is the cubic model  $W(z) = x_1(z^3 - 3z)/2 + x_2$  whose critical values are  $w_{1,2} = x_2 \mp x_1$  and  $h_i = (-3/2)^{-1/2}(w_i - w_j)^{-1/2}$  ( $j \neq i$ ).

**Example 2** (Mirror of 2d  $\mathbb{P}^1$   $\sigma$ -model). This LG model has a superpotential  $W(z)$  which is a solution to the ODE

$$\left( \frac{dW}{dz} \right)^2 = P_2(W), \quad P_2(z) \text{ a monic quadratic polynomial.} \tag{4.18}$$

The general form is

$$W(z) = x_1 \sinh z + x_2, \quad \text{where } z \sim z + 2\pi i, \tag{4.19}$$

with couplings  $(x_1, x_2) \in \mathbb{C}^\times \times \mathbb{C}$ . The map  $w$  in eq. (4.11) becomes

$$\begin{aligned} w: (x_1, x_2) &\mapsto (x_1 + x_2, -x_1 + x_2) \equiv (w_1, w_2), \\ w: \mathbb{C}^\times \times \mathbb{C} &\xrightarrow{\sim} \mathcal{C}_2 \equiv \left\{ (w_1, w_2) \in \mathbb{C}^2 \mid w_1 \neq w_2 \right\}, \end{aligned} \tag{4.20}$$

which shows that the model is very complete.



**Example 3** (The Weierstrass LG model). Eq. (4.18) is replaced by

$$\left(\frac{dW}{dz}\right)^2 = P_3(W), \quad P_3(z) \text{ cubic polynomial.} \quad (4.21)$$

and the superpotential becomes

$$W(z) = x_1 \wp(z|x_2) + x_3, \quad \text{where } z \sim z + m + x_2 n, \quad m, n \in \mathbb{Z}. \quad (4.22)$$

The coupling constant space is  $\mathcal{X} = \tilde{\mathcal{X}}$  where<sup>44</sup>

$$(x_1, x_2, x_3) \in \mathbb{C}^\times \times \mathcal{H}/\Gamma(2) \times \mathbb{C} \equiv \tilde{\mathcal{X}}. \quad (4.23)$$

The critical values are

$$w_a = x_1 e_a(x_2) + x_3, \quad (4.24)$$

where  $e_a(x_2)$  ( $a = 1, 2, 3$ ) are the three roots of the Weierstrass cubic polynomial as a function of the period  $x_2$  which are globally defined for  $x_2 \in \mathcal{H}/\Gamma(2)$ . Note that for  $x_2 \in \mathcal{H}/\Gamma(2)$  the  $e_a(x_2)$  are all distinct, so  $w_a \neq w_b$  for  $a \neq b$ . Hence the critical-value yields the isomorphism  $\tilde{\mathcal{X}} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathcal{C}_3$ . The group  $\mathfrak{S}_3 \cong \text{SL}(2, \mathbb{Z})/\Gamma(2)$  permutes the three roots  $e_a(x_2)$ , so the map  $w$  is an isomorphism

$$w: \mathcal{X} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathcal{Y}_3 \equiv \mathcal{C}_3/\mathfrak{S}_3. \quad (4.25)$$

The model is very complete and symmetric.

**Example 4** (A  $d = 4$  model). We consider the elliptic superpotential

$$W(z) = \frac{x_1}{\wp(z|x_2) - x_3} + x_4, \quad (4.26)$$

with parameter space covered by

$$\tilde{\mathcal{X}} = \left\{ (x_1, x_2, x_3, x_4) \in \mathbb{C}^\times \times \mathcal{H}/\Gamma(2) \times \mathbb{C} \times \mathbb{C} \mid x_3 \notin \{e_1(x_2), e_2(x_2), e_3(x_2)\} \right\}. \quad (4.27)$$

The four critical points correspond to the 2-torsion subgroup  $(\mathbb{Z}_2)^2 \cong E[2] \subset E$  of the elliptic curve  $E$  of periods  $(1, x_2)$ . The critical values are

$$(w_1, w_2, w_3, w_4) = \left( \frac{x_1}{e_1(x_2) - x_3} + x_4, \frac{x_1}{e_2(x_2) - x_3} + x_4, \frac{x_1}{e_3(x_2) - x_3} + x_4, x_4 \right) \quad (4.28)$$

same notation as in the previous example. Since the  $e_a(x_2)$  are distinct, we have the isomorphism

$$w: \tilde{\mathcal{X}} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathcal{C}_4 \equiv \left\{ (w_1, w_2, w_3, w_4) \in \mathbb{C}^4 \mid w_i \neq w_j \text{ for } i \neq j \right\}. \quad (4.29)$$

One checks that  $\mathfrak{S}_4$  is a “duality”, so the actual coupling space is  $\tilde{\mathcal{X}}/\mathfrak{S}_4 \cong \mathcal{Y}_4$ . The superpotential satisfies an ODE of the form

$$\left(\frac{dW}{dz}\right)^2 = P_4(W), \quad \text{a polynomial of order 4.} \quad (4.30)$$

---

<sup>44</sup>Notation:  $\mathcal{H}$  is the upper half-plane,  $\Gamma(2)$  the principal congruence subgroup of the modular  $\text{SL}(2, \mathbb{Z})$  of level 2. We recall that  $\text{SL}(2, \mathbb{Z})/\Gamma(2) \cong \mathfrak{S}_3$ , the symmetric group in three letters.

**Example 5** (Hyperelliptic models). The above three examples may be easily generalized to the case of LG models [5] whose superpotential  $W(z)$  satisfies the ODE

$$\left(\frac{dW}{dz}\right)^2 = P_d(W), \quad P_d(z) = \prod_{i=1}^d (z - w_i), \quad d \geq 1. \quad (4.31)$$

Note that

$$h_i^{-2} = \langle e_i \rangle^{-1} \equiv W''|_{i\text{-th vacuum}} = \frac{1}{2} P'_d(w_i) = \frac{1}{2} \prod_{j \neq i} (w_i - w_j). \quad (4.32)$$

Comparing with eq. (4.1), we see that the diagonal components of the UV Berry connection are

$$\mathbf{A}_{kk} = -d \log h_k = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{j \neq k} \frac{dw^k - dw^j}{w^k - w^j}. \quad (4.33)$$

while the off-diagonal components are given by the entries of the UV matrix  $\mathbf{Q}$ . Since this matrix is constant, we may compute  $\mathbf{Q}_{kl}$  in the limit  $w_k - w_l \rightarrow 0$  whose effective theory is (4.18). The  $2 \times 2$  matrix  $(\mathbf{Q}_{ab})_{a,b=k,l}$  ( $k \neq l$ ) is symmetric with zeros on the diagonal and eigenvalues  $\pm \hat{c}/2$  where  $\hat{c}$  is the Virasoro central charge of the effective theory, in this case  $\hat{c} = 1$ ; hence

$$\mathbf{A}_{kl} = -\frac{1}{2} \sum_{i < j} (\delta_{ki} \delta_{lj} + \delta_{kj} \delta_{li}) \frac{dw_i - dw_j}{w_i - w_j} \quad \text{for } k \neq l. \quad (4.34)$$

The matrix  $B_{ij}$  is

$$B_{ij} = J_{ij}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) \quad \text{where} \quad J_{ij}(\lambda) \equiv \begin{matrix} & k & l \\ \begin{matrix} k \\ l \end{matrix} & \begin{pmatrix} & & \\ & \lambda & -\lambda \\ & -\lambda & \lambda \end{pmatrix} & \end{matrix}, \quad \lambda \in \mathbb{C}. \quad (4.35)$$

$J_{ij}(\lambda)$  is called the *Jordan-Pochhammer*  $d \times d$  matrix [53]. It is well-known that the Jordan-Pochhammer matrix satisfies the infinitesimal braid relations for all  $\lambda$ . Since it also satisfies the symmetry conditions,  $B_{ij} = J_{ij}(\lambda)$  defines a (reducible) representation of the braid group  $\mathcal{B}_d$ . This representation is conjugate to the usual *Burau* representation [10, 11] over the ring  $\mathbb{Z}[t, t^{-1}]$  where  $t = -e^{2\pi i \lambda}$ . For  $t = 1$ , i.e.  $\lambda = \frac{1}{2} \bmod 1$ , the Burau representation factors through the symmetric group  $\mathfrak{S}_d$ , so the braid representations from the UV Berry connection of the hyperelliptic models is somehow “trivial”:

$$g_i \mapsto \begin{pmatrix} 1_{i-1} & & \\ & -\sigma_1 & \\ & & 1_{n-i-1} \end{pmatrix}, \quad (4.36)$$

where  $1_k$  is the  $k \times k$  unit matrix and  $\sigma_1$  the usual Pauli matrix.

**Remark.** Notice that very complete  $tt^*$  geometries corresponds to 2d (2,2) models with no non-trivial wall-crossing phenomena.

## 4.4 A fancier viewpoint: $\mathcal{Q}$ -reconstruction

### 4.4.1 Generalities

$tt^*$  geometry (in the domain where  $\mathcal{R}_x$  is semi-simple) may be stated in a fancier language [4, 61]. Let  $F(x, \bar{x})$  ( $x \in \mathcal{X}$ ) be a physical quantity which is SUSY protected, i.e. invariant under continuous deformations of the  $D$ -terms: all  $tt^*$  quantities have this property. Since the  $w_i$  are local coordinates in  $\mathcal{X}$ , we may rewrite<sup>45</sup>  $F(x)$  in the form  $F(w_1, \dots, w_d)$  where  $d$  is the Witten index which we assume to be finite. The functions  $F(w_1, \dots, w_d)$  enjoy intriguing properties. First of all

$$F(e^{i\varphi}w_1+a, e^{i\varphi}w_2+a, \dots, e^{i\varphi}w_d+a) = F(w_1, w_2, \dots, w_d) \quad \forall a \in \mathbb{C}, \varphi \in \mathbb{R}/2\pi i\mathbb{Z}, \quad (4.37)$$

since  $w_i \rightarrow e^{i\varphi}w_i + a$  corresponds to the trivial deformation of the  $F$ -terms

$$\int d^2\theta \mathcal{W} \rightarrow \int d^2\theta (e^{i\varphi} \mathcal{W} + a) = \int d^2\theta' \mathcal{W} \quad (\text{where } \theta' = e^{i\varphi/2}\theta), \quad (4.38)$$

which leaves invariant all physical quantities. The group  $\mathbb{C} \times \mathbb{R}/2\pi i\mathbb{Z}$  in (4.37) is the 2d Euclidean Poincaré symmetry: in this regard the protected functions  $F(w_1, \dots, w_d)$  behave as Euclidean  $d$ -point functions

$$F(w_1, \dots, w_d) \rightsquigarrow \langle \mathcal{O}_1(w_1) \mathcal{O}_2(w_2) \dots \mathcal{O}_n(w_d) \rangle_F. \quad (4.39)$$

This idea may be made more sound if we choose the function  $F(w_i)$  in a clever way; we may find  $tt^*$  quantities  $F$  which obey all the Osterwalder-Scharader axioms for the correlators of an Euclidean QFT except *locality* and *statistics*, i.e. univaluedness of the  $d$ -point functions.

In other words, for an appropriate choice of the  $tt^*$  quantity  $F$ , the only unusual feature of the would-be “operators”  $\mathcal{O}_k(w)$  in (4.39) is that, in general, they are not mutually local but rather have non-trivial braiding properties. The origin of this peculiar fact is easy to understand:  $tt^*$  geometry states that suitable combinations of the SUSY protected quantities satisfy exactly the *same* PDEs as the correlation functions for (the scaling limit of) the off-critical Ising model (the Sato-Miwa-Jimbo isomonodromic PDEs [34–41]). The  $tt^*$  functions differ from the actual Ising correlators only because the solutions of the PDEs relevant for a given SUSY model are specified by a different set of boundary conditions [4, 5]. For an isomonodromic system of PDEs, the boundary conditions are encoded in the monodromy representation, i.e. in the braiding properties of the  $\mathcal{O}_k(w)$ . Given the braid group action on the  $\mathcal{O}_k(w)$ , the  $tt^*$  geometry is fully determined.

There is an obvious necessary condition for the existence of a fancy correspondence like (4.39). The  $tt^*$  quantities  $F_A(w^i)$  must have the following property: they should be regular when the  $w_i$  are all distinct, but get singularities of the form

$$(w_i - w_j)^{-\Delta_{ij}} (\bar{w}_i - \bar{w}_j)^{-\bar{\Delta}_{ij}} \quad (4.40)$$

---

<sup>45</sup>We omit writing the dependence on the barred parameters  $\bar{x}$ , with the understanding that the functions are not necessarily holomorphic.

as two critical values coalesce together,  $w_i - w_j \rightarrow 0$ . More precisely, when two critical values collide in the coupling constant space  $\mathcal{X}$  we should see an emergent OPE algebra

$$\mathcal{O}_i(w_i) \mathcal{O}_j(w_j) \sim \sum_{\ell} C(w_i - w_j)_{ij,\ell} \mathcal{O}_{\ell}(w_i) \tag{4.41}$$

for the “operators”  $\mathcal{O}_j(w_j)$ . To check that the condition holds, it is convenient to adopt the 2d perspective and work in the set-up where the (2,2) LG is quantized on the line  $\mathbb{R}$  at a finite temperature  $T = R^{-1}$ . The infinite volume Hilbert space decomposes into subspaces  $\mathcal{H}_{i,j}$  of definite SUSY central charge  $Z$ : the sector  $\mathcal{H}_{i,j}$  is defined by imposing the boundary condition that the field configuration approaches the  $i$ -th classical vacuum (resp. the  $j$ -th one) as  $x \rightarrow -\infty$  (resp.  $x \rightarrow +\infty$ ). In  $\mathcal{H}_{i,j}$  the SUSY central charge is  $Z_{ij} = 2(w_i - w_j)$  [3, 5, 44], and the BPS states in  $\mathcal{H}_{i,j}$  ( $i \neq j$ ), if any, have masses  $2|w_i - w_j|$ . A typical protected quantity  $F_A(w_i)$  may be computed by a periodic Euclidean path integral over the cylinder, and hence has the schematic form

$$F_A(w_i) = \text{Tr} \left[ (-1)^F \mathcal{F}_A e^{-RH} \right] \tag{4.42}$$

for some operator  $\mathcal{F}_A$ . Only BPS configurations contribute to SUSY protected quantities, so that

$$F_A(w_i) = \sum_{|m\rangle \in \text{M-BPS}} \langle m | (-1)^F \mathcal{F}_A | m \rangle \langle m | e^{-RH} | m \rangle \tag{4.43}$$

where M-BPS stands for the set of BPS multi-particle  $H$ -eigenstates. The matrix element  $\langle m | e^{-RH} | m \rangle$  is suppressed by a factor  $\prod e^{-2R|w_i - w_j|}$  where the product is over the BPS particles in the state  $|m\rangle$ . The sum (4.43) is absolutely convergent if all the masses  $|Z_{ij}|$  are non-zero, but it may get singular as  $w_i - w_j \rightarrow 0$ , producing a power-law IR divergence in  $F_A(w_i)$  of the general form (4.40). This is the only mechanism which may spoil regularity of  $F_A(w_i)$  as a (multivalued) function of the  $w_i$ . Since the coupling space OPEs (4.41) encode the monodromy representation, they fully determine the  $tt^*$  geometry. Understanding the leading singularity as  $w_i - w_j \rightarrow 0$  amounts to know how many BPS species become massless in the limit  $w_i - w_j \rightarrow 0$  together with some tricky signs<sup>46</sup> (or, more generally, phases) in the comparison between  $\mathcal{O}_i(w_i) \mathcal{O}_j(w_j)$  and  $\mathcal{O}_j(w_j) \mathcal{O}_i(w_i)$ . In particular, the limit  $\lim_{w_j \rightarrow w_i} \mathcal{O}_j(w_j) \mathcal{O}_i(w_i)$  is regular if and only if the net number of BPS solitons connecting the  $i$ -th and  $j$ -th vacua is zero.

The idea of the reconstruction approach to  $tt^*$  geometry is that in principle we can reconstruct a non-local QFT  $\mathcal{Q}$  on the  $w$ -plane from the  $tt^*$  quantities interpreted as certain combinations of (multi-valued) correlation functions. Conversely, if we have a putative non-local QFT  $\mathcal{Q}$  we may compute the  $tt^*$  quantities by standard field-theoretical technics. The  $\mathcal{Q}$ -reconstruction strategy is potentially effective since we know that  $\mathcal{Q}$  is a “free” theory in the sense that its amplitudes are computed by Gaussian path integrals [4].

---

<sup>46</sup> These signs are akin of the tricky sign in the OPE of  $\beta, \gamma$  commuting ghosts with respect to the conventional fermion  $b, c$ .

### 4.4.2 $w$ -plane OPEs

The  $w$ -plane theory  $\mathcal{Q}$  is modelled on the QFT describing the Ising model off-criticality. The basic degree of freedom is an Euclidean 2d Majorana<sup>47</sup> free spinor

$$\Psi(u) = \begin{pmatrix} \Psi_+(u) \\ \Psi_-(u) \end{pmatrix}, \quad u \in \mathbb{C} \tag{4.44}$$

of mass  $R$  [4]. Locally on the  $w$ -plane the Lagrangian of  $\mathcal{Q}$  may be written simply

$$\bar{\Psi}(\not{\partial} - R)\Psi. \tag{4.45}$$

What makes  $\mathcal{Q}$  non-trivial is the fact that  $\Psi$  is not univalued, but rather has complicated branching properties due to the insertion of topological defect operators  $\mathcal{O}_k(w_k)$  at the points corresponding to critical values of the superpotential  $\mathcal{W}$  of the original LG model.

Let us study the singularity in the OPE

$$\Psi_{\pm}(u) \mathcal{O}_k(w_k) \tag{4.46}$$

when  $u \rightarrow w^k$ . Let  $z_* \in \mathcal{K}$  be a critical point of  $\mathcal{W}$  which is mapped to the  $k$ -critical value  $w_k$  by the map  $\mathcal{W}: \mathcal{K} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ . Since  $\mathcal{R}_w$  is semi-simple, the superpotential is weakly<sup>48</sup> Morse, so that in a neighborhood  $U \ni z_*$  we may find local holomorphic coordinates  $z^a$  such that

$$\mathcal{W}(z^a; w) = w_k + \frac{1}{2} \sum_a (z^a - z_*^a)^2 \quad \text{in } U. \tag{4.47}$$

Working in perturbation theory around the  $k$ -th classical vacuum  $z_*$ , the situation is indistinguishable from free field theory to *all* orders. Hence locally we see the same singularities as in free field theory. The free-field behavior defines two possible defect insertions at  $w_k$ :  $\mu_k$  and  $\sigma_k$ . Their OPEs are [4]

$$\begin{aligned} \Psi_+(u)\sigma_k(w) &\sim \frac{i}{2}(u-w)^{-1/2}\mu_k(w) & \Psi_-(u)\sigma_k(w) &\sim -\frac{i}{2}(\bar{u}-\bar{w})^{-1/2}\mu_k(w) \\ \Psi_+(u)\mu_k(w) &\sim \frac{1}{2}(u-w)^{-1/2}\sigma_k(w) & \Psi_-(u)\mu_k(w) &\sim \frac{1}{2}(\bar{u}-\bar{w})^{-1/2}\sigma_k(w), \end{aligned} \tag{4.48}$$

up to  $O(|u-w|^{1/2})$  contributions.

### 4.4.3 Hurwitz data and defect operators

Although the  $tt^*$  defect operators  $\mu_k(w)$ ,  $\sigma_k(w)$  have the same OPE singularities with the fermion field  $\Psi(u)$  as the Ising order/disorder operators, they are *not* in general mere

<sup>47</sup> Imposing the Majorana condition is equivalent to imposing that the vacuum wave-functions are real. While we may chose a real basis for the wave-function, this is different from the holomorphic basis one uses in  $tt^*$  geometry. This change of basis makes the comparison of formulae a little indirect. The relation is

$$|\psi^{(j)}\rangle_{\text{real}} = \frac{1}{2}(|E_j\rangle + g_{jk}|E_k\rangle).$$

From the viewpoint of  $tt^*$  taking the fermion to be Dirac rather than Majorana may be more natural.

<sup>48</sup> I.e. its critical points are non-degenerate but the critical values are not necessarily all distinct.

Ising order/disorder operators since globally they have different topological order/disorder properties. In other words, their insertion makes the multi-valued Fermi field  $\Psi(u)$  of the  $\mathcal{Q}$  theory to have different monodromy properties. Let us see how this arises.

The fermion  $\Psi(u)$  is univalued on a suitable connected cover  $\mathring{\Sigma}$  of the  $w$ -plane punctured at the positions  $\{w_k\}$  of the defects

$$f: \mathring{\Sigma} \rightarrow \mathbb{C} \setminus \{w_k\}. \tag{4.49}$$

By the Riemann existence theorem [62], we may extend  $f$  over the punctures to a *branched* cover of Riemann surfaces,  $f: \Sigma \rightarrow \mathbb{P}^1$ , branched at  $\{w_1, w_2, \dots, w_d, \infty\}$ . In “good” models the order of the monodromy at  $\infty$  is finite. Let us consider first the special case that the cover has a finite degree  $m$ . Then  $f$  is specified by its Hurwitz data at the  $(d+1)$  branching points [62]. The Hurwitz data consist of an element  $\pi_k \in \mathfrak{S}_m$  for each finite branch point  $w_k$ , while  $\pi_\infty = (\pi_1 \pi_2 \cdots \pi_d)^{-1}$ . The monodromy group<sup>49</sup> of the cover,  $\mathfrak{Mon}$ , (not to be confused with the  $tt^*$  monodromy group  $\mathfrak{Mon}!$ ) is the subgroup of  $\mathfrak{S}_m$  generated by the  $\pi_k$ ’s

$$\mathfrak{Mon} = \langle \pi_1, \pi_2, \dots, \pi_d \rangle \subset \mathfrak{S}_m. \tag{4.50}$$

Since  $\Sigma$  is connected,  $\mathfrak{Mon} \subset \mathfrak{S}_m$  acts transitively on  $\{1, 2, \dots, m\}$ . In other words,  $\{\pi_1, \dots, \pi_d, \pi_\infty\}$  is a *constellation* in  $\mathfrak{S}_m$  [62]. We recall that the *passport* of a constellation [62] is the list of the conjugacy classes of its permutations  $\pi_k$ . From the OPEs (4.48) we see that, for  $k \neq \infty$  the conjugacy class corresponds to the partition

$$\text{conjugacy class of } \pi_k \rightsquigarrow \overbrace{2 + 2 + \dots + 2}^{\text{\#critical points over } w_k} + 1 + 1 + \dots + 1 = m. \tag{4.51}$$

In particular, when  $\mathcal{R}$  is semi-simple  $\pi_k$  is an involution for  $k \neq \infty$ . In a complete<sup>50</sup>  $tt^*$  geometry generically we have just one critical point over each critical value, and  $\pi_k$  acts as a reflection in the standard representation of  $\mathfrak{S}_m$ ; then for a semi-simple, complete  $tt^*$  geometry *with  $m$  finite*,  $\mathfrak{Mon}$  is a finite rational reflection group, hence the Weyl group of a Lie algebra. In this case the order  $h$  of  $\pi_\infty$  is equal to the order of the adjoint action of the quantum monodromy, that is, to the smallest positive integer  $h$  such that  $hq_s \in \mathbb{N}$  for all  $s$ , where  $\{q_s\}$  is the set of  $U(1)_R$  charges of the chiral primaries at the UV fixed point of the 2d (2,2) Landau-Ginzburg QFT. Note that the cover  $f$  is Galois only for  $m = 2$ .

When  $m$  is infinite the geometry is a bit more involved. One still has  $\mathfrak{Mon} = \langle \pi_1, \pi_2, \dots, \pi_d \rangle$  where (in the semi-simple case) the  $\pi_k$  are involutions. But now  $\mathfrak{Mon}$  is an infinite group. In general,

**Fact 2.** *For a semi-simple  $tt^*$  geometry, the topological defect operator  $\mathcal{O}_k(w_k)$  inserted at the  $k$ -th critical value (cfr. (4.39)) is specified by the choice between  $\sigma$ -type and  $\mu$ -type and the involution  $\pi_k \in \mathfrak{Mon}$ .*

<sup>49</sup> Also called the *cartographic* group [62].

<sup>50</sup> For a non-complete  $tt^*$  geometry the following assertion is false.

#### 4.4.4 Complete $tt^*$ geometries and Coxeter groups

For a complete  $tt^*$  geometry, generically<sup>51</sup>  $\pi_k$  ( $k \neq \infty$ ) consists of just one 2-cycle  $(i_k, j_k)$  interchanging the  $i_k$ -th sheet of  $\Sigma$  with the  $j_k$ -th one. The  $k$ -th classical vacuum is to be identified geometrically with the intersection of these two sheets.<sup>52</sup> The absolute number of 2d BPS solitons connecting the  $k$ -th and  $h$ -vacua is given by the number of sheets they share

$$|\mu_{kh}| = \#\left(\{i_k, j_k\} \cap \{i_h, j_h\}\right). \tag{4.52}$$

Indeed, the map  $\mathcal{W}: \mathcal{K} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$  factors through  $\Sigma$ , and the BPS solitons are just the lifts of the straight segment in  $\mathbb{P}^1$  with end points  $w_k$  and  $w_h$  to sheets of the cover  $\Sigma$  which contain both classical vacua. In particular, for a *complete* theory the number of 2d BPS solitons between any two vacua is at most 2. This can be easily seen directly. One has

$$\begin{aligned} |\mu_{kh}| = 0 &\Leftrightarrow \text{order } \pi_k \pi_h \text{ is } 2 \\ |\mu_{kh}| = 1 &\Leftrightarrow \text{order } \pi_k \pi_h \text{ is } 3 \\ |\mu_{kh}| = 2 &\Leftrightarrow \text{order } \pi_k \pi_h \text{ is } 1 \end{aligned} \tag{4.53}$$

The fermionic part of the wave-function introduce some extra tricky minus signs.

**Fact 3.** *In a complete  $tt^*$  geometry with  $d < \infty$  vacua we have a group epimorphism*

$$\text{Cox}(\Gamma) \rightarrow \mathfrak{Mon} \tag{4.54}$$

where  $\text{Cox}(\Gamma)$  is the Coxeter group [63] with graph  $\Gamma$  whose  $d - \kappa$  nodes are the equivalence classes  $\{1, 2, \dots, d\} / \sim$  ( $k \sim h$  iff  $|\mu_{kh}| = 2$ ) two nodes  $k \not\sim h$  being connected by  $|\mu_{kh}|$  edges.

Let us illustrate our claims in some examples.

**Example 6.** The simplest instance are the Ising  $n$ -point functions themselves. In this case  $\sigma, \mu$  are  $\mathbb{Z}_2$  order/disorder operators and we do not need to distinguish them with the suffix  $k$ ; in facts, in the Ising case  $m = 2$  and all  $\pi_k$ 's are the permutation (12).  $\Sigma$  is the hyperelliptic curve

$$y^2 = \prod_{i=1}^n (z - w^i) \tag{4.55}$$

of example 5. Between any two classical vacua there are precisely two BPS solitons. No wall-crossing phenomena.  $\Gamma$  is the Dynking graph of  $A_1$  (one node, no edge) and  $\mathfrak{Mon} = \text{Weyl}(A_1) \cong \mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z}$ .

**Remark.** Ising  $n$ -point functions are not just complete  $tt^*$  geometries, they are *very* complete. Indeed, examples 2, 3 and 4 correspond, respectively, to Ising  $n = 2, 3, 4$  points.

<sup>51</sup>An instance of the non-generic situation is described in example 10.

<sup>52</sup>The precise sense of the identification will be clarified momentarily in sections 4.4.5, 4.4.6.

**Example 7.** A (2,2) minimal model of type  $\mathfrak{g} \in ADE$  is complete but not very complete for  $d \equiv \text{rank } \mathfrak{g} \geq 3$ . The monodromy group  $\mathfrak{Mon} \cong \text{Weyl}(\mathfrak{g})$ , while  $\text{Mon}$  differs by a  $\mathbb{Z}_2$  flat bundle due to the aforementioned signs. For  $k \neq \infty$ , the involution  $\pi_k$  is a reflection with respect to some root of  $\mathfrak{g}$ . The monodromy at infinity  $\pi_\infty$  belongs to the (unique) conjugacy class of the Coxeter element; its order  $h$  is the Coxeter number.<sup>53</sup> The relation  $\pi_1 \cdots \pi_r \pi_\infty = 1$  is the usual expression of the Coxeter element in terms of simple reflections. Vacua  $k$  and  $j$  are connected by  $s_{kj} - 2$  BPS solitons,  $s_{kj}$  being the order of  $\pi_k \pi_j$ . When  $d \geq 3$  we have non-trivial wall-crossing: the several inequivalent BPS chambers are in one-to-one correspondence with the integral quadratic forms [64]

$$q(x_i) = \sum_{i=1}^d x_i^2 + \sum_{i < j} \mu_{ij} x_i x_j, \quad \mu_{ij} \in \mathbb{Z} \tag{4.56}$$

$\mathbb{Z}$ -equivalent to the Tits form of  $\mathfrak{g}$ ,  $\frac{1}{2} C_{ij} x_i x_j$ , where  $C_{ij}$  is the Cartan matrix of  $\mathfrak{g}$ . In particular, there is a special BPS chamber with soliton multiplicities  $|\mu_{ij}| = |C_{ij}|$  for  $i \neq j$ . In this special chamber  $\Gamma$  is just the Dynkin graph of  $\mathfrak{g}$ .

**Example 8.** In the previous example we may replace the finite-dimensional Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{g}$  by an affine (simply-laced) Lie algebra  $\widehat{\mathfrak{g}} \in \widehat{ADE}$ . The  $tt^*$  monodromy group  $\text{Mon}$  is again a  $\mathbb{Z}_2$  twist of  $\text{Weyl}(\widehat{\mathfrak{g}})$ , and the cover monodromy group  $\mathfrak{Mon}$  is a quotient of  $\text{Weyl}(\widehat{\mathfrak{g}})$ . For  $\widehat{\mathfrak{g}} = \widehat{A}_1$  we get back the case  $n = 2$  of example 6 and  $\mathfrak{Mon} = \text{Weyl}(A_1) \cong \text{Weyl}(\widehat{A}_1)/\mathbb{Z}$ . The discrepancy (modulo signs) between  $\text{Mon}$  and  $\mathfrak{Mon}$  expresses the fact that the affine LG models are asymptotically-free instead of having a regular UV fixed point [5]. The conjugacy class of  $\pi_\infty$  is the image of a Coxeter element  $c \in \text{Weyl}(\widehat{\mathfrak{g}})$ ; in facts  $(\pi_\infty)_{\text{s.s.}} \cong e^{2\pi i Q}$  is the element of  $\text{Weyl}(\mathfrak{g})$  obtained by reducing the action of  $c$  on the root lattice modulo the imaginary root.<sup>54</sup> In the  $\widehat{A}_r$  case there are  $r$  inequivalent conjugacy classes of Coxeter elements [66], hence  $r$  inequivalent LG models whose  $\pi_\infty \in \text{GL}(r+1, \mathbb{Z})$  satisfies

$$(\pi_\infty^p - 1)(\pi_\infty^{r+1-p} - 1) = 0, \quad p = 1, 2, \dots, r. \tag{4.57}$$

Their superpotential reads [57]

$$\mathcal{W}(z) = y^p + y^{p-r-1}, \quad p = 1, \dots, r. \tag{4.58}$$

The case  $\widehat{A}_1$  coincides with example 1. Again the BPS chambers are related to quadratics forms  $\mathbb{Z}$ -equivalent to the Tits form of the affine Kac-Moody algebra, but the relation is no longer one-to-one.

**Example 9.** We may generalize the construction even further by considering an *extended affine Lie algebra* (EALA) [67, 68]

$$\mathfrak{g}_r^{\overbrace{(1, \dots, 1)}^{\kappa \ 1's}}, \quad d = r + \kappa, \tag{4.59}$$

<sup>53</sup>For comparison, the conjugacy class of  $\varrho_\infty \in \text{Mon}$ , as acting on the root lattice of  $\mathfrak{g}$ , is  $-\pi_\infty$ .

<sup>54</sup>See lemma 3.2 in [65].



of nullity  $\kappa$  and type  $\mathfrak{g}_r \in ADE$ . These Lie algebras are central extensions of the Lie algebra of maps  $(S^1)^\kappa \rightarrow \mathfrak{g}_r$ ; for  $\kappa = 1$  we get back the affine Kac-Moody algebra  $\widehat{\mathfrak{g}}$  and for  $\kappa = 2$  the toroidal Lie algebras. The EALA  $A_1^{(1,1,\dots,1)}$  corresponds to the Ising  $(\kappa + 1)$ -point functions: in this special case the  $tt^*$  geometry is very complete, not just complete, and  $\Gamma$  reduces to the  $A_1$  Dynkin graph. The role of the EALA's in the classification of complete 4d  $\mathcal{N} = 2$  QFTs is outlined in ref. [69]. E.g.  $D_4^{(1,1)}$  corresponds to  $\mathcal{N} = 2$  SU(2) SYM coupled to  $N_f = 4$  fundamentals; the corresponding 2d (2,2) complete model has superpotential

$$\mathcal{W}(z) = \frac{P_4(z)}{z^2(z-1)^2(z-\lambda(\tau))^2}, \quad (4.60)$$

where  $P_4(z)$  is a polynomial of degree 4 coprime with the denominator.

**Example 10.** Let us consider the minimal  $A_{2m-1}$  models at a maximally *non-generic* point in coupling space. We take  $\mathcal{W}(z)$  to be proportional to the square of the  $m$ -th Chebyshev polynomial,<sup>55</sup>  $\mathcal{W}(z) = \Delta w T_m(z)^2$ . The superpotential is a Belyj function with Grothendieck *dessin d'enfants* [70–72]

$$\bullet \text{---} \circ \text{---} \bullet \text{---} \circ \text{---} \bullet \text{---} \dots \text{---} \circ \text{---} \bullet \text{---} \circ \text{---} \bullet \quad (4.61)$$

Erasing the two black nodes at the ends — which do not correspond to SUSY vacua — we get back the Dynkin graph of  $A_{2m-1}$ . The SQM monodromy group  $\mathfrak{Mon}$  coincides with the cartographic group of the *dessin* (4.61): it is generated by two involutions  $\pi_\bullet, \pi_\circ \in \mathfrak{S}_{2m} \equiv \text{Weyl}(A_{2m-1})$  associated to the black/white nodes

$$\pi_\circ = \prod_{i=1}^m s_{2i-1}, \quad \pi_\bullet = \prod_{i=1}^{m-1} s_{2i} \quad (4.62)$$

where  $s_j \in \text{Weyl}(A_{2m-1})$  is the  $j$ -th simple reflection. It is well-known that  $\pi_\infty = \pi_\circ \pi_\bullet \in \text{Weyl}(A_{2m-1})$  is a Coxeter element.

#### 4.4.5 The case of one chiral field

The relation between the non-local QFT  $\mathcal{Q}$  on the  $w$ -plane and the 4-supercharge SQM is especially simple when the superpotential depends on a single chiral field  $z$ ,  $W(z; w_1, \dots, w_d)$ . The actual Schrodinger wave-function of the  $i$ -th vacuum (the one which corresponds to the idempotent  $e_i \in \mathcal{R}_w$  under the isomorphism  $\mathcal{V}_w \cong \mathcal{R}$ ), written as a one-form through the  $\zeta$ -dependent identification

$$\chi^\dagger|0\rangle \rightsquigarrow \frac{dz}{\zeta}, \quad \bar{\chi}^\dagger|0\rangle \rightsquigarrow \zeta d\bar{z}, \quad (4.63)$$

is (for  $|\zeta| = 1$ )

$$\begin{aligned} \psi_i(z; \zeta) = & \langle \Psi_+(W(z)) \mu_1(w_1) \cdots \mu_{i-1}(w_{i-1}) \sigma_i(w_i) \mu_{i+1}(w_{i+1}) \cdots \mu_d(w_d) \rangle \frac{W'(z) dz}{\zeta \tau(w_j)} \\ & + \langle \Psi_-(W(z)) \mu_1(w_1) \cdots \mu_{i-1}(w_{i-1}) \sigma_i(w_i) \mu_{i+1}(w_{i+1}) \cdots \mu_d(w_d) \rangle \frac{\overline{W}'(\bar{z}) \zeta d\bar{z}}{\tau(w_j)} \end{aligned} \quad (4.64)$$

<sup>55</sup>Up to fields redefinitions, it is the same as the model with the Chebyshev superpotential  $T_{2m}(z)$ .

where the normalization constant  $\tau(w^j)$  is the Sato-Miwa-Jimbo  $\tau$ -function [4, 34–41]

$$\tau(w_k) = \langle \mu(w_1) \cdots \mu(w_d) \rangle. \tag{4.65}$$

It is easy to check that the free massive Dirac equation satisfied by  $\Psi_{\pm}(z)$  is equivalent to the zero-energy Schroedinger equation for  $\psi_i(z; \zeta)$ . The Hurwitz data should be chosen so that  $\psi_i(z; \zeta)$  is univalued in  $z$  for the given  $W(z)$ . The exact brane amplitudes then have the form

$$\langle i|\Gamma, \zeta \rangle = \int_{\Gamma} e^{-(RW/\zeta + R\zeta\bar{W})} \psi_i(z; \zeta), \tag{4.66}$$

where the relative one-cycle  $\Gamma$  is the support of the brane. Notice that  $\langle i|\Gamma, \zeta \rangle$  depends only on the image of  $\Gamma$  in the curve  $\Sigma$ , i.e. in the smallest branched cover of the  $W$ -plane on which the wave-functions are well defined.

If the Stein manifold  $\mathcal{K}$  is one-dimensional, we may lift the condition that the chiral ring  $\mathcal{R}_x$  is semi-simple. In fact, by the Chinese remainder theorem,<sup>56</sup> we have

$$\mathcal{R} \cong \Gamma(\mathcal{K}, \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{K}})/(\partial_z W) \cong \prod_k \mathbb{C}[z]/(z^{v_k-1}), \tag{4.67}$$

where the product is over the distinct zeros of  $\partial_z W$  and  $v_k$  are their orders. In correspondence to the critical value  $w_k$  we have to insert in the  $w$ -plane a topological operator which introduces a  $v_k$ -th root cut instead of a square-root cut as in the semi-simple case ( $v_k = 2$ ). The two-fold choice of spin operators  $\mu, \sigma$  gets replaced by a  $(v_k + 1)$ -fold choice of topological insertions  $\tau_{s_k}$  ( $s_k = 1, \dots, v_k + 1$ ), to be supplemented by an element  $\pi_k \in \mathfrak{S}_m$  of order  $(v_k + 1)$ . One easily checks that, with these prescriptions, eq. (4.64) reproduces the correct vacuum wave-functions whenever they are known from other arguments [17].

#### 4.4.6 $N$ -fields: a formula for the brane amplitudes

Suppose now that we have a complete LG model with  $N$  chiral fields, i.e.  $\dim \mathcal{K} = N$ . The inverse image of a point  $w$  in the  $W$ -plane has the homotopy type of a bouquet of  $(N - 1)$ -spheres [5, 13, 74]; we fix a set of  $(N - 1)$ -cycles  $S_{\alpha}(w)$  ( $\alpha = 1, \dots, d \equiv$  the Witten index) which form a basis of the homology of the fiber. The SQM wave-function of a SUSY vacuum  $\Psi$  is a  $N$ -form on  $\mathcal{K}$  so

$$\psi_{\alpha}(w) = \int_{S_{\alpha}(w)} \Psi \tag{4.68}$$

is a  $d$ -tuple of one-forms on the  $W$ -plane. If we transport the homology cycles  $S_{\alpha}(w)$  along a closed loop in the  $W$ -plane (punctured at the critical values) we come back with a different (integral) basis of  $(N - 1)$ -cycles  $S'_{\alpha}(w) = N_{\alpha\beta} S_{\beta}(w)$ . The integral matrix  $N_{\alpha\beta}$  is described by the Picard-Lefschetz theory [5, 50, 51]. Thus (4.68) is best interpreted as a single but multi-valued wave-function  $\psi(w)$  on the  $W$ -plane branched at the critical points whose monodromy representation is determined by the Picard-Lefschetz formula in terms of the intersection matrix  $S_{\alpha} \cdot S_{\beta}$ , i.e., in physical terms [5, 13], by the BPS spectrum of the corresponding 2d model. Let  $\Sigma$  be the minimal branched cover of the  $W$ -plane such

---

<sup>56</sup> See footnote 11.

that  $\psi(w)$  is uni-valued ( $\Sigma$  is then automatically Stein [25]). Clearly the map  $W: \mathcal{K} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$  factorizes through  $\Sigma$ . Let  $\Gamma$  be the image in  $\Sigma$  of the support of the brane  $\mathcal{B}$ . Then

$$\langle \Psi | \Gamma, \zeta \rangle = \int_{\Gamma} e^{-(Rw/\zeta + R\zeta\bar{w})} \psi(w; \zeta) \tag{4.69}$$

where, in terms of  $\mathcal{Q}$ -amplitudes ( $|\zeta| = 1$ ),

$$\begin{aligned} \psi(w; \zeta) = & \langle \Psi_+(w) \mu_1(w_1) \cdots \mu_{i-1}(w_{i-1}) \sigma_i(w_i) \mu_{i+1}(w_{i+1}) \cdots \mu_d(w_d) \rangle \frac{dw}{\zeta \tau(w_j)} \\ & + \langle \Psi_-(w) \mu_1(w_1) \cdots \mu_{i-1}(w_{i-1}) \sigma_i(w_i) \mu_{i+1}(w_{i+1}) \cdots \mu_d(w_d) \rangle \frac{\zeta d\bar{w}}{\tau(w_j)} \end{aligned} \tag{4.70}$$

In other words, an  $N$ -field LG model with a Morse superpotential may be replaced by a one-field LG model with  $\mathcal{K} = \Sigma$  and superpotential  $w: \Sigma \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$  given by the factorization of  $W$  through  $\Sigma$ .

#### 4.4.7 $\tau$ -functions vs. brane amplitudes

From the isomonodromic viewpoint, the most important SUSY protected function is the  $\tau$ -function [4, 34–41] i.e. the  $d$ -point function of the would-be order operators

$$\tau(w_j) = \langle \mu(w_1) \mu(w_2) \cdots \mu(w_d) \rangle. \tag{4.71}$$

$\tau(w_j)$  is just the partition function of a free fermion with the non-trivial monodromy properties implied by the insertions of the  $\mu$ 's at the points  $w^j$ . Stated in a different language, it is the partition function of a free massive fermion on  $\Sigma$  with suitable boundary conditions at  $w_k$  and infinity. The  $\tau$  function may be recover from the vacuum wave  $\psi(u; w_j)$  by quadratures [4]; geometrically  $\tau$  is given by the formula

$$\log \tau = -K + \log \det(1 + g) + \sum_i w_i \bar{w}_i, \tag{4.72}$$

where  $g$  is the  $tt^*$  metric in the canonical basis and  $K$  is the Kähler potential for the metric on the coupling space  $\mathcal{X}$  [4]

$$K_{i\bar{j}} = \partial_i \partial_{\bar{j}} K \equiv \text{tr}(C_i \bar{C}_j). \tag{4.73}$$

**Example 11.** Consider the case of just two vacua, and let

$$G_{\pm} = \exp(\pm u(L)), \quad \text{where } L = 2R|w_1 - w_2|, \tag{4.74}$$

be the  $tt^*$  metric of the symmetric/antisymmetric linear combinations of the two vacua. By definition

$$\text{eigenvalues of } \mathbf{Q} = \pm \frac{\hat{c}}{2} = \pm \lim_{L \rightarrow 0} \frac{L}{2} \frac{d}{dL} u(L) \tag{4.75}$$

In this case the  $tt^*$  equations reduce to a special form of Painlevé III [75–78]

$$\frac{d^2 u}{dL^2} + \frac{1}{L} \frac{du}{dL} = 2 \sinh(2u), \quad L > 0 \tag{4.76}$$

the solutions which are regular for  $0 < L < \infty$  satisfy

$$u(L) \sim -r \log L + \text{subleading} \quad \text{as } L \rightarrow 0, \tag{4.77}$$

with  $-1 \leq r \leq 1$ .  $r$  characterizes the regular solution completely [75–78]. Changing the sign of  $r$  just interchange order and disorder; we fix our conventions so that  $r$  is non-negative. For a regular *arithmetic* solution  $r$  is the rational number such that [5]

$$\left| 2 \sin \frac{\pi r}{2} \right| = \#(\text{BPS solitons in 2d}) \quad \Rightarrow \quad 0 \leq r \leq 1. \tag{4.78}$$

Then  $\hat{c} = r$ . In particular,  $r = 1$  for the Ising two-point functions, that is, for the 2d  $\mathbb{P}^1$   $\sigma$ -model. For a 2-vacua model one has [75, 79]

$$\tau = \langle \mu(w_1) \mu(w_2) \rangle = R^{(2r-r^2)/4} e^{u(L)/2} \exp \left[ \frac{1}{4} \int_L^\infty \left( s \sinh^2 u(s) - s \left( \frac{du(s)}{ds} \right)^2 \right) ds \right] \tag{4.79}$$

while

$$\langle \sigma(w_1) \mu(w_2) \rangle = R^{(2r-r^2)/4} e^{-u(L)/2} \exp \left[ \frac{1}{4} \int_L^\infty \left( s \sinh^2 u(s) - s \left( \frac{du(s)}{ds} \right)^2 \right) ds \right]. \tag{4.80}$$

#### 4.4.8 UV limit: the $\mathcal{Q}$ conformal blocks

In the physical 2d (2,2) LG model, the UV limit consists in sending to zero the radius  $R$  of the circle  $S^1$  on which we quantize the theory. But  $R$  is also the mass of the Majorana fermion in the  $\mathcal{Q}$  theory, see eq. (4.45). Hence the physical UV limit of the 2d LG model coincides with the UV limit of the  $\mathcal{Q}$  theory on the  $w$ -plane.

As  $R \rightarrow 0$  the  $\mathcal{Q}$  theory gets critical, the left and right modes of the fermion  $\Psi(u)$  decouple, and the multi-valued would-be correlation functions (4.39) become sums of products of *bona fide* left/right conformal blocks.

The statement holds (roughly) for all  $tt^*$  quantities: in the UV they become some complicate combination of conformal blocks. Then the differential equations they satisfy — the  $tt^*$  equations — should be related in a simple way to the PDEs for the conformal blocks: the analogue of the BPZ equations for the conformal blocks of the  $(p, q)$  minimal models [80] and Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov equations for the 2d current algebra [9]. Both sets of equations define flat connections and monodromy representations.<sup>57</sup> As already mentioned, they are specializations of the universal Kohno monodromy [53]. From this viewpoint the fact that in the UV limit the Berry connection ( $\equiv$  the  $tt^*$  Lax one in the limit) has the Kohno form — typical of the monodromy action on conformal blocks — comes as no surprise. That things should work this way is somehow obvious in the case of example 6 where the  $tt^*$  geometry describes correlations of the Ising model off-criticality:

<sup>57</sup>See e.g. chap. XIX of [81]; for the minimal model case, see [82].

sending the mass to zero  $R \rightarrow 0$ , we just get the critical Ising model ( $\equiv$  the minimal (4,3) CFT), and the PDEs of the massive case should reduce to the conformal ones.

In connecting the  $tt^*$  monodromy with the braid representation of  $\mathcal{Q}$  blocks, we need to use the precise dictionary between the two. From eq. (4.70) we see that brane amplitudes, being normalized, are to be seen as *ratios* of  $n$ -point functions in  $\mathcal{Q}$  theory

$$\frac{\langle \Psi_{\pm}(z)\mu(w_1)\cdots\sigma(w_j)\cdots\mu(w_n)\rangle}{\langle \mu(w_1)\cdots\mu(w_n)\rangle} \tag{4.81}$$

rather than correlators. Hence the actual braid representation on the  $\mathcal{Q}$  theory operators is the  $tt^*$  one twisted by the one defined by the  $\tau$ -function. In this way one solves an apparent problem with example 5: there the  $tt^*$  UV Berry monodromy factorizes through  $\mathfrak{S}_n$ , whereas the braiding action of Ising blocks do not. Taking into account the twist by  $\tau$  solves the problem. Moreover, the ratio (4.81) does not correspond to the amplitude written in a holomorphic trivialization of the vacuum bundle  $\mathcal{V}$ .

We continue example 11.

**Example 12.** The asymptotics of the amplitudes (4.79), (4.80) as  $L \sim 0$  is [79]

$$\langle \mu(w_1)\mu(w_2)\rangle \sim \text{const.} \left(\frac{R}{L}\right)^{(2r-r^2)/4} \quad \langle \sigma(w_1)\mu(w_2)\rangle \sim \text{const.} R^r \left(\frac{R}{L}\right)^{-(2r+r^2)/4} . \tag{4.82}$$

So in the limit  $R \rightarrow 0$  the second correlation vanishes, whereas the first one becomes the CFT 2-point function

$$\langle \mu(w_1)\mu(w_2)\rangle = \frac{\text{const.}}{|w_1 - w_2|^{(2r-r^2)/4}} \tag{4.83}$$

which says that the conformal 2d fields  $\mu$  and  $\sigma$  have dimensions<sup>58</sup>

$$(h, \tilde{h}) = \left(\frac{2r - r^2}{16}, \frac{2r - r^2}{16}\right) \tag{4.84}$$

whereas the second equation (4.82) says that two  $\mu$ 's have a second fusion channel, besides the identity,

$$\mu \cdot \mu = [1] + [\mathcal{O}], \tag{4.85}$$

the primary field  $\mathcal{O}$  having dimension  $h_{\mathcal{O}}$

$$2h - h_{\mathcal{O}} = -\frac{2r + r^2}{8} \quad \Rightarrow \quad h_{\mathcal{O}} = \frac{r}{2}. \tag{4.86}$$

Setting  $r = 1$  we recover well known properties of the Ising model.

For the left-movers of the critical Ising model we have

$$\frac{\langle \psi(z)\sigma(w_1)\mu(w_2)\rangle}{\langle \mu(w_1)\mu(w_2)\rangle} = \text{const.} \frac{(z - w_1)^{-1/2}(z - w_2)^{-1/2}(w_1 - w_2)^{1/2-1/8}}{(w_1 - w_2)^{-1/8}} \tag{4.87}$$

---

<sup>58</sup>From the OPEs (4.48) we see that the two fields have the same dimension.

and

$$\int_{\Gamma} dz \frac{\langle \psi(z) \sigma(w_1) \mu(w_2) \rangle}{\langle \mu(w_1) \mu(w_2) \rangle} = \text{const.} (w_1 - w_2)^{1/2} \int_{\Gamma} \frac{dz}{\sqrt{(z - w_1)(z - w_2)}} \quad (4.88)$$

The integral is regular as  $w_1 \rightarrow w_2$  and is a constant. Hence

$$\left( d - \frac{1}{2} \frac{d(w_1 - w_2)}{w_1 - w_2} \right) \int_{\Gamma} dz \frac{\langle \psi(z) \sigma(w_1) \mu(w_2) \rangle}{\langle \mu(w_1) \mu(w_2) \rangle} = 0. \quad (4.89)$$

The  $w$ -plane CFT method works better if the underlying  $tt^*$  geometry is very complete (as in the Ising cases). This leads to the idea of computing the  $tt^*$  monodromy representation by guessing the “CFT  $\mathcal{Q}$ ” on the  $w$ -plane. However to do so one has to establish a precise dictionary between correlators in the  $\mathcal{Q}$  theory and  $tt^*$  quantities.

#### 4.5 Relation with $\mathfrak{sl}(2)$ Hecke algebra representations

We need to look more in detail to the matrices  $B_{ij}$  in the UV Berry connection (4.2) for a very complete  $tt^*$  geometry. We already computed them for example 5.

We consider the  $B_{ij}$ ’s from the point of view of the  $\mathcal{Q}$  theory on the  $w$ -plane. We put ourselves in the generic case, where the critical values  $w_k$  are all distinct, although the argument goes through even without this assumption.<sup>59</sup> Since  $B_{ij}$  is the residue of the pole of  $\mathcal{A}$  as  $w_i - w_j \rightarrow 0$ , we focus on this limit from the viewpoint of the 2d (2,2) LG model. Without loss, we may deform the  $D$ -terms so that the only light degrees of freedom are the BPS solitons interpolating between vacua  $i$  and  $j$  of mass  $2|w_i - w_j|$ . We may integrate out all other degrees of freedom, and we end up with an effective IR description with just these two SUSY vacua.<sup>60</sup> From the viewpoint of SQM, the 2d BPS solitons look BPS *instantons*. The effect of these BPS instantons is to split the two vacua not in energy as it happens in non-SUSY QM — vacuum energy is SUSY protected! — but in the charge  $q$  of the  $U(1)_R$  symmetry which emerges in the  $w_i - w_j \rightarrow 0$  limit. In this limit there is also an emergent  $\mathbb{Z}_2$  symmetry interchanging the two “classical”<sup>61</sup> vacua, so the  $U(1)_R$  eigenstates should be the symmetric and anti-symmetric linear combinations of the two “classical” vacua. Their charges  $q$  should be opposite by PCT, and may be computed from eq. (4.78)

$$2 \sin(\pi q) = \pm \#(\text{BPS instantons}). \quad (4.90)$$

To simplify the notation, we renumber the  $w_k$  so that  $w_i, w_j$  become  $w_1$  and  $w_2$ . Then, with a convenient choice of the relative phases of the two states, the upper-left  $2 \times 2$  block of the matrix  $\mathcal{Q}$  takes the form

$$\mathcal{Q} \Big|_{\substack{\text{upper-left} \\ \text{block}}} = -\lambda \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \equiv -\lambda \sigma_1. \quad (4.91)$$

<sup>59</sup>Cfr. example 10.

<sup>60</sup>A theory with just 2 vacua is not UV complete if the number of BPS species connecting them is more than 2 [57], but here UV completeness is not an issue since we use the two-vacua theory just as an effective low-energy description valid up to some non-zero energy scale.

<sup>61</sup>By “classical” vacua we mean the *quantum* vacua which under the isomorphism  $\mathcal{R} \cong \mathcal{V}$  correspond to the idempotents of the chiral ring.

This formula holds for the canonical trivialization; in a “natural” trivialization we have a shift by a constant multiple of 1. To be fully general, we allow a shift of the r.h.s. of (4.91) by  $\mu$

$$-\lambda \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \rightarrow -\lambda \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} + \mu \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}. \quad (4.92)$$

**Example 13.** For the mirror of the  $\mathbb{P}^1$   $\sigma$ -model (example 1) one has

$$\lambda = \frac{\hat{c}_{\text{uv}}}{2} = \frac{1}{2}, \quad \mu = \frac{\#(\text{chiral fields})}{2} = \frac{1}{2}. \quad (4.93)$$

At each of the two critical points  $w_{1,2}$  we have a two-fold choice: we may insert either a  $\sigma$ -like defect or a  $\mu$ -like one.<sup>62</sup> From eq. (4.64) we see different choices correspond to different vacua of the original LG model. The matrix  $\sigma_1$  in (4.91) has the effect of flipping  $\sigma \leftrightarrow \mu$  in the two-vacua system. It is therefore convenient to introduce a two-component notation

$$\Sigma_{k,\alpha}(w) = \begin{pmatrix} \sigma_k(w) \\ \mu_k(w) \end{pmatrix}, \quad (4.94)$$

and write the UV  $\mathcal{Q}$ -amplitudes (conformal blocks) for the effective two vacua theory in the form

$$\left\langle \cdots \Sigma_{1,\alpha}(w_1) \Sigma_{2,\beta}(w_2) \right\rangle \in \mathbf{V}_{(1)} \otimes \mathbf{V}_{(2)} \quad (4.95)$$

where  $\mathbf{V}_{(a)} \cong \mathbb{C}^2$ ,  $a = 1, 2$ , are two copies of the representation space of  $\mathfrak{sl}(2, \mathbb{C})$ . Notice that the amplitudes span only a subspace of  $\mathbf{V}_{(1)} \otimes \mathbf{V}_{(2)}$  of dimension 2, two linear combinations vanishing since they are bounded holomorphic functions on the cover  $\Sigma$  which vanish at infinity.

Acting on these blocks, the matrix (4.91) reads

$$B_{12} = -\lambda \left( \sigma_+^{(1)} \otimes \sigma_-^{(2)} + \sigma_-^{(1)} \otimes \sigma_+^{(2)} \right) - \mu \sigma_3^{(1)} \otimes \sigma_3^{(2)} \quad (4.96)$$

where  $\sigma_\ell^{(a)}$  is the Pauli matrix acting on the  $(a)$ -copy  $\mathbf{V}_{(a)}$  of  $\mathbb{C}^2$  and  $\lambda$  is a constant.

We are led to conclude that the UV Berry connection  $\mathcal{D}$  of a very complete  $tt^*$  geometry with  $d$  SUSY vacua must have the general form

$$\mathcal{D} = d - 2 \sum_{i < j} \left( \lambda_{i,j} s_\ell^{(i)} s_\ell^{(j)} + \mu_{i,j} s_3^{(i)} s_3^{(j)} \right) \frac{d(w^i - w^j)}{w^i - w^j} \quad (4.97)$$

acting on sections of a bundle  $\mathcal{V} \rightarrow \mathcal{X}$  whose fibers are modelled on the vector space

$$\mathbf{V}^{\otimes d} \equiv \mathbf{V}_{(1)} \otimes \mathbf{V}_{(2)} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{V}_{(d)}, \quad (4.98)$$

$s_\ell^{(a)}$  being the  $\mathfrak{su}(2)$  generators which act on the  $\mathbf{V}_{(a)} \cong \mathbb{C}^2$  factor space, i.e.

$$s_\ell^{(a)} = 1 \otimes \cdots \otimes 1 \otimes \overbrace{\frac{1}{2} \sigma_\ell}^{\text{a-th}} \otimes 1 \otimes \cdots \otimes 1, \quad \ell = 1, 2, 3. \quad (4.99)$$

---

<sup>62</sup>It is convenient to make complex the Ising fermion  $\Psi$  [4]; then the two-fold choices corresponds to the two components of the spin operator for the free fermion system.

The natural connection on the “ $\mathcal{Q}$  conformal blocks” may differ from  $\mathcal{D}$  by a line bundle twisting; for instance, in the Ising case we have the normalization factor  $\langle \mu(w_1) \cdots \mu(w_g) \rangle^{-1}$ . This corresponds to replacing  $\mathcal{D} \rightarrow \mathcal{D} + \mathbf{1} \cdot d \log f$  for some multi-valued holomorphic function  $f$ , the “normalization factor”. We shall omit this term which may be easily recovered using the reality constraint.

The actual brane amplitudes live in a rank  $d$  sub-bundle  $\mathcal{V}$  of the rank  $2^d$  bundle  $\mathcal{V}$ . The  $tt^*$  Lax equations requires this sub-bundle to be preserved by parallel transport with the connection  $\mathcal{D}$ . To see this, consider the total angular momentum

$$L_\ell = \sum_a s_\ell^{(a)}, \quad \ell = 1, 2, 3. \tag{4.100}$$

$L_3$  commutes with  $\mathcal{D}$ , so the eigen-bundles  $\mathcal{V}_m \subset \mathcal{V}$  of given  $L_3$  are preserved by parallel transport. The vacuum bundle corresponds to the eigen-bundle of  $L_3$  with eigenvalue  $m = 1 - d/2$

$$\mathcal{V} = \mathcal{V}_{1-d/2}. \tag{4.101}$$

The constants  $\lambda_{i,j}, \mu_{i,j}$  in eq. (4.97) are restricted by two conditions:

- 1)  $\mathcal{D}$  is flat acting on the sub-bundle  $\mathcal{V}$ ;
- 2) the monodromy representation of  $\mathcal{D}$  is “arithmetic”.

If, in addition, the very complete  $tt^*$  geometry is symmetric:

- 3) the constants  $\lambda_{i,j}, \mu_{i,j}$  should be independent of  $i, j$ .

#### 4.5.1 The Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov equation

A well-known solution to condition 1) is [52, 53]:

$$\lambda_{i,j} = \frac{\lambda}{2} \quad \mu_{i,j} = 0 \quad \text{for all } i, j, \tag{4.102}$$

that is,

$$\mathcal{D} = d - \lambda \sum_{i < j} \frac{s_\ell^{(i)} s_\ell^{(j)}}{w_i - w_j} d(w_i - w_j). \tag{4.103}$$

This connection is automatically flat for all  $\lambda$  when acting on sections of the big bundle  $\mathcal{V}$  since its coefficients are given by the universal  $\mathfrak{sl}(2)$   $R$ -matrix [83]; 3) is also satisfied. We shall see momentarily that condition 2) reduces to  $\lambda \in \mathbb{Q}$ .

On the other hand, it is easy to check that the only symmetric (i.e. independent of  $i, j$ ) solution to the flatness condition for a connection of the form (4.97) is given by eq. (4.102). We see this observation as the basic evidence that a symmetric very complete  $tt^*$  geometry has a UV Berry connection of the form (4.103).



Since  $\mathcal{D}$  is flat on the larger bundle  $\mathcal{V}$ , the (physical) UV limit of the  $tt^*$  linear problem,<sup>63</sup>  $\mathcal{D}\Psi = 0$  with  $\Psi \in \Gamma(\mathcal{X}, \mathcal{V})$ , may be extended to the big bundle

$$\mathcal{D}\Psi = 0 \quad \Psi \in \Gamma(\mathcal{X}, \mathcal{V}). \tag{4.104}$$

This equation is the celebrated  $\mathfrak{sl}(2)$  Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov for the  $d$ -point functions in the 2d WZW model with group  $SU(2)$  [9]. In that context  $\lambda$  is quantized in discrete values

$$\lambda = \frac{2}{\kappa + 2}, \quad \kappa \in \mathbb{Z}, \tag{4.105}$$

for the 2d  $SU(2)$  current algebra at level  $\kappa$ .

Since the connection (4.103) is invariant under the symmetric group  $\mathfrak{S}_d$ , the representation  $\sigma$  of  $\mathcal{P}_d$  given by its monodromy extends to a representation of the full braid group  $\mathcal{B}_d$  in  $d$  strings. A representation of this form is called a *Hecke algebra representation* of  $\mathcal{B}_d$  [53, 85] since it factorizes through a (Iwahori-)Hecke algebra [11].

By the argument leading to eq. (4.101), parallel transport by the Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov connection  $\mathcal{D}$  preserves the  $tt^*$  vacuum sub-bundle  $\mathcal{V} \subset \mathcal{V}$ . In fact more is true: indeed,  $\mathcal{D}$  preserves all eigen-bundles  $\mathcal{V}_{l,m} \subset \mathcal{V}$  of given total angular momentum

$$\psi \in \mathcal{V}_{l,m} \quad \Leftrightarrow \quad (L^2 - l(l+1))\psi = (L_3 - m)\psi = 0, \tag{4.106}$$

$$m = l, l-1, l-2, \dots, -l, \quad l \in \frac{1}{2}\mathbb{N}. \tag{4.107}$$

Comparing with (4.101)

$$\mathcal{V} = \mathcal{V}_{d/2, 1-d/2} \oplus \mathcal{V}_{d/2-1, 1-d/2} \tag{4.108}$$

$$\text{rank } \mathcal{V}_{d/2, 1-d/2} = 1, \quad \text{rank } \mathcal{V}_{d/2-1, 1-d/2} = d-1. \tag{4.109}$$

The fiber of  $\mathcal{V}_{d/2, 1-d/2}$  is spanned by a *unique* vacuum preserved by the monodromy representation. It has the properties expected for the preferred vacuum  $|\text{vac}\rangle$  of section 2.3.

As we shall see momentarily, the monodromy representation of the braid group  $\mathcal{B}_d$  defined by restricting the Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov connection to the  $tt^*$  sub-bundle  $\mathcal{V}$  is isomorphic to the Burau one [11, 86].

**Remark.** The identification of  $\mathcal{D}|_{\mathcal{V}}$  with the UV Berry connection of a very complete  $tt^*$  geometry entails that its monodromy representation is unitary. It is known that the Burau representation is unitary [11, 87].

### 4.5.2 Hecke algebra representations

The presentation of the Artin braid group  $\mathcal{B}_d$  is given in eq. (4.10). Let  $q \in \mathbb{C}^\times$ . The Hecke algebra of the symmetric group  $\mathfrak{S}_d$ ,  $H_d(q)$ , is the  $\mathbb{C}$ -algebra [11] with generators

$$1, g_1, g_2, \dots, g_{d-1} \tag{4.110}$$

---

<sup>63</sup>The equations do not contain the twistor parameter  $\zeta$  any longer. Indeed,  $\zeta$  is essentially the phase of the SUSY central charge, but in the superconformal algebra which emerge in the UV the central charge should be the zero operator by the Haag-Lopuszański-Sohnius theorem [84].

and relations

$$g_i g_{i+1} g_i = g_{i+1} g_i g_{i+1}, \quad g_i g_j = g_j g_i \text{ for } |i - j| \geq 2, \quad (g_i + 1)(g_i - q) = 0. \quad (4.111)$$

$H_d(1)$  is simply the group algebra  $\mathbb{C}[\mathfrak{S}_d]$  of the symmetric group  $\mathfrak{S}_d$ . If  $q$  is not a root of unity of order  $2 \leq n \leq d$ ,  $H_d(q)$  is semisimple [11] and its simple modules are  $q$ -deformations of the irreducible representations of  $\mathfrak{S}_d$ . If  $q$  is a non-trivial root of unity new interesting phenomena appear [88].

Comparing eqs. (4.10), (4.111) we see that the correspondence  $\sigma_i \mapsto g_i$  yields an algebra homomorphism

$$\varpi: \mathbb{C}[\mathcal{B}_d] \rightarrow H_d(q). \quad (4.112)$$

A linear representation  $\varrho$  of the braid group  $\mathcal{B}_d$  is called a *Hecke algebra representation* if it factorizes through  $\varpi$ . In such a representation the generators  $\varrho(g_i)$  have at most two distinct eigenvalues:  $-1$  and  $q$ .

The Hecke algebra may be rewritten in terms of the generators  $e_i = (q - g_i)/(1 + q)$  subjected to the relations

$$e_i^2 = e_i \quad e_i e_j = e_j e_i \quad \text{for } |j - i| \geq 2 \quad (4.113)$$

$$e_i e_{i+1} e_i - \beta^{-1} e_i = e_{i+1} e_i e_{i+1} - \beta^{-1} e_{i+1}, \quad \text{with } \beta = 2 + q + q^{-1}. \quad (4.114)$$

The Temperley-Lieb algebra  $A_d(q)$  [14, 15] is the  $\mathbb{C}$ -algebra over the generators  $1, e_1, \dots, e_{d-1}$  satisfying the two relations (4.113) while relation (4.114) is replaced by the stronger condition

$$e_i e_{i+1} e_i - \beta^{-1} e_i = 0. \quad (4.115)$$

A special class of Hecke algebra representations are the ones which factorize through the Temperley-Lieb algebra  $A_d(q)$ . One has

**Theorem** (see [52]). *The monodromy representation of the flat connection (4.103) is a Hecke algebra representation of the braid group  $\mathcal{B}_d$  which factorizes through the Temperley-Lieb algebra  $A_d(q)$  with*

$$q = \exp(\pi i \lambda) \quad (4.116)$$

given by the correspondence

$$\sigma_i \rightarrow q^{-3/4}(q - (1 + q)e_i), \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, d - 1. \quad (4.117)$$

Comparing with the third of eq. (4.111) we see that the  $\sigma_i$  are semi-simple and

$$\left\{ \text{eigenvalues of the monodromy generator } \sigma_i \right\} \subset \left\{ q^{1/4}, -q^{-3/4} \right\}. \quad (4.118)$$

The transport of the  $i$ -th defect operator around the  $(i + 1)$  one corresponds to the square of  $\sigma_i$  and has spectrum

$$\left\{ q^{1/2}, q^{-3/2} \right\}. \quad (4.119)$$

By arithmeticity of  $tt^*$ , in the present context requires these eigenvalues to be roots of unity, that is,

$$q \in \boldsymbol{\mu}_\infty. \quad (4.120)$$

Hence the Hecke algebra representations which appear in  $tt^*$  are the tricky ones at  $q$  a root of 1.

### 4.5.3 Examples

**Example 14** (Ising  $n$ -point functions). For all LG models whose  $tt^*$  geometry is given by the Ising  $n$ -point functions (examples 1–4), the  $R \rightarrow 0$  limit of the  $\mathcal{Q}$ -theory is the critical Ising theory i.e. the minimal Virasoro model  $(p, q) = (4, 3)$  with three primaries 1,  $\sigma$ , and  $\varepsilon$  (in the notation of [80]) of dimension

$$\Delta_1 = 0, \quad \Delta_\sigma = \frac{1}{16}, \quad \Delta_\varepsilon = \frac{1}{2} \tag{4.121}$$

and fusion rule

$$\sigma \cdot \sigma = [1] + [\varepsilon]. \tag{4.122}$$

The topological defect operator of the  $w$ -plane  $\mathcal{Q}$ -theory are identified with  $\sigma$ . Therefore, when we transport one of them around another one we get a matrix with eigenvalues

$$\left\{ e^{2\pi i(\Delta_\varepsilon - 2\Delta_\sigma)}, e^{2\pi i(\Delta_1 - 2\Delta_\sigma)} \right\} = \left\{ e^{2\pi i 3/8}, e^{-2\pi i/8} \right\} \tag{4.123}$$

which is of the form (4.120)(4.119) for  $q = e^{2i\pi 3/4}$ , i.e. for  $\lambda = 3/2$ .

We have recovered from  $tt^*$  the known action of the braid group  $\mathcal{B}_d$  on the Ising  $d$ -point functions at criticality. In particular they are flat sections of the connection in eq. (4.103) with  $\lambda = 3/2$ .

### 4.6 Chern-Simons, Jones polynomials, minimal models, etc.

The braid group actions which factor through representations of the Temperley-Lieb at  $q$  a root of unity are ubiquitous in mathematical physics. They describe the monodromy of the conformal blocks of two-dimensional  $SU(2)$  current algebra at level  $k$  [9, 54]. Due to the relation of 2d current algebra with 3d Chern-Simons [89], they also describe the braiding properties of Wilson loops in  $SU(2)$  Chern-Simons theory, and hence are the representations relevant for the Jones polynomials [85] and the theory of the quantum groups [81].

In addition, they also describe the braiding properties of the  $(p, q)$  Virasoro minimal models [82]. In the Virasoro  $(p, q)$  minimal models the operator  $\phi_{r,s}$  has dimension

$$h_{r,s} = \frac{(pr - qs)^2 - (p - q)^2}{4pq}, \quad 1 \leq r \leq q - 1, \quad 1 \leq s \leq p - 1. \tag{4.124}$$

The braiding the operator  $\phi_{1,2}$  (which for  $(p, q) = (4, 3)$  reduces to the spin field  $\sigma$  of example 14) correspond to the Temperley-Lieb algebra with

$$q \equiv e^{\pi i \lambda} = e^{2\pi i q/p}. \tag{4.125}$$

The fusion rule of  $\phi_{1,2}$  is similar to eq. (4.122)

$$\phi_{1,2} \cdot \phi_{1,2} = [1] + [\phi_{1,3}]. \tag{4.126}$$

One has

$$h_{1,1} - 2h_{1,2} = 1 - 3\frac{q}{2p}, \quad h_{1,3} - 2h_{1,2} = \frac{q}{2p}, \tag{4.127}$$

so eq. (4.123) generalizes to

$$\left\{ e^{2\pi i(h_{1,3}-2h_{1,2})}, e^{2\pi i(h_{1,1}-2h_{1,2})} \right\} = \left\{ e^{2\pi i q/2p}, e^{-6\pi i q/2p} \right\} \quad (4.128)$$

corresponding to eq. (4.119) with  $q = e^{2\pi i q/p}$ .

The Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov equations is also related to an integrable statistical model, the Gaudin model of type  $\mathfrak{gl}(2)$  [12, 90]. This is discussed in the next subsection.

#### 4.7 Comparison with the asymmetric limit

$tt^*$  geometry predicts that the monodromy representations defined by the asymmetric limit of the brane amplitude and the UV Berry connection are “essentially” the same (and isomorphic when the UV limit is regular).

For a very complete  $tt^*$  geometry, where  $\pi_1(\mathcal{X}) = \mathcal{B}_d$ , the asymmetric limit monodromy yields a so-called *homology representation* of the braid group, a.k.a. the Lawrence-Krammer-Bigelow (LKB) representation [47, 91, 92], see also [11, 55, 96, 97]. In facts, it is known that the LKB representation is essentially equivalent to the monodromy of the Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov connection. In this section we limit ourselves to sketch the relation between the two points of view on the monodromy.

There exist explicit integral representations of the solutions to the Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov equations of the schematic form [93, 94]

$$\Psi = \int_{\Gamma} e^{\lambda \Phi(z_i; \lambda)} A(z_i; \lambda) dz_1 \wedge \cdots \wedge dz_N \quad (4.129)$$

where  $\Phi$ , known as the master function, has the same functional form as the superpotential  $\mathcal{W}$  but with “renormalized” couplings in general.  $\Gamma$  is a basis of relative cycles (which may be chosen to be Lefschetz thimbles). In the limit  $\lambda \rightarrow \infty$  the integral may be evaluated by the saddle point. The saddle point equations coincide with the algebraic Bethe ansatz equations of an integrable model [95], the Gaudin model of type  $\mathfrak{gl}(2)$ .  $\Phi(z; \infty)$  is the corresponding Yang-Yang functional. The vector  $A$  evaluated at the saddle point is a common eigenstate of the Gaudin Hamiltonians [12, 90]

$$H_a = \sum_{b \neq a} \frac{s_{(a)}^\ell s_{(b)}^\ell}{w_a - w_b}. \quad (4.130)$$

The integral expression (4.129) may be identified with the asymmetric limit brane amplitude, taking into account the redefinitions of the couplings in relating the different limits.

#### 4.8 Puzzles and caveats

Some aspects of the previous discussion look a bit puzzling because they do not fit in the intuition one gets from the study of “typical” 4-SUSY models, i.e. Landau-Ginzburg models whose superpotentials are *entire* functions on  $\mathbb{C}^n$ . Except for a couple of instances, the very complete  $tt^*$  geometries do not belong to the “typical” class of LG models. The very special  $tt^*$  geometries have no non-trivial wall-crossing, and this aspect implies quite

peculiar properties when  $d > 2$ . Luckily, we have a nice theoretical laboratory to study these issues, namely the Ising  $d$ -point functions. We know that the Ising functions exist and define a totally regular  $tt^*$  geometry, so naively unexpected facts which do occur for Ising functions should not be regarded as “strange” but rather as archetypical of very complete  $tt^*$  geometries not arising from entire superpotentials.

Let us discuss the puzzling aspect in the context of the  $d$ -point Ising function. The corresponding  $tt^*$  brane amplitudes are the solution to the Riemann-Hilbert problem in twistor space with Stokes matrix  $S = 1 + A$ , where  $A$  is the strictly upper triangular  $d \times d$  matrix

$$A_{ij} = \begin{cases} 2(-1)^{j-i} & \text{for } j > i \\ 0 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases} \tag{4.131}$$

Note the identity  $S^{-1} = USU^{-1}$  with  $U = \text{diag}\{(-1)^i\}$ , which implies  $|S_{ij}| = |S_{ij}^{-1}|$ , a manifestation of the fact that these  $TT^*$  geometries have no wall-crossing. As in example 9, the symmetric matrix

$$C = S^t + S, \tag{4.132}$$

is the Cartan matrix of the EALA  $A_1^{(1, \dots, 1)}$  of nullity  $\kappa = d - 1$  and type  $A_1$ . The lattice of imaginary roots of the EALA,  $\Gamma_{\text{im}}$ , is identified with the radical sub-lattice of the integral symmetric form  $C$ , hence  $\text{rank } \Gamma_{\text{im}} = d - 1$ . The action of  $\text{Weyl}(A_1^{(1, \dots, 1)})$  on the rank-1 quotient lattice

$$\Gamma_{\text{root}}/\Gamma_{\text{im}} \tag{4.133}$$

yields a surjection  $\bar{\cdot}: \text{Weyl}(A_1^{(1, \dots, 1)}) \rightarrow \text{Weyl}(A_1) \cong \mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z}$ . The Coxeter element  $\text{Cox} \in \text{Weyl}(A_1^{(1, \dots, 1)})$  is represented by the  $d \times d$  matrix

$$\text{Cox} = -(S^t)^{-1}S, \tag{4.134}$$

(i.e. *minus* the 2d quantum monodromy [5]). From eq. (4.132) it is clear that  $\text{Cox}$  acts as the identity on  $\Gamma_{\text{im}}$ , while it acts as  $\pm 1$  on  $\Gamma_{\text{root}}/\Gamma_{\text{im}}$ . Since  $\det \text{Cox} = (-1)^d$ , we conclude that  $\overline{\text{Cox}} = (-1)^d$ . Thus for  $d$  odd  $\text{Cox}$  is semi-simple with minimal polynomial  $z^2 - 1$ , and the radical of the skew-symmetric form<sup>64</sup>  $S^t - S$  has rank 1; for  $d$  even all eigenvalues of the Coxeter elements are  $+1$  and  $\text{Cox}$  has a single non-trivial Jordan block of size 2. From the arguments at the end of section 4.3 in [5] means that for  $d$  odd the model behaves as a UV superconformal theory, and for  $d$  even as an asymptotically-free QFT. This matches the physics of the first few  $d$ 's in terms of the 4d  $\mathcal{N} = 2$  QFT which corresponds to the Ising correlators in the sense of refs. [57, 59]: in 4d  $d = 1$  leads to a free hyper,  $d = 2$  to pure  $\mathcal{N} = 2$  SYM with  $G = \text{SU}(2)$ , and  $d = 3$  to  $\text{SU}(2)$   $\mathcal{N} = 2^*$  SYM.

For  $d > 3$  things become less obvious and we get the aforementioned puzzles. The 2d quantum monodromy is  $H \equiv -\text{Cox}$ ; its eigenvalues are identified with  $e^{2\pi i q_R}$  [5], where  $q_R$  are the  $\text{U}(1)_R$  charges of the Ramond vacua of the SCFT emerging at the UV fixed point. For  $d$  even we get  $q_R = \frac{1}{2} \pmod 1$  for all Ramond vacua, while for  $d$  odd there is in addition a single Ramond vacuum with  $q_R = 0 \pmod 1$ . The Ramond  $\text{U}(1)_R$  charges should

---

<sup>64</sup>Under the 4d/2d correspondence [57–59], the form  $S^t - S$  is the 4d Dirac electro-magnetic pairing, and its radical is the lattice of the 4d flavor charges, so its rank coincides with the rank of the 4d flavor group.

be distributed symmetrically around zero by PCT, so the natural conclusion is that we have  $[d/2]$  Ramond charges  $q_R = -\frac{1}{2}$ ,  $[d/2]$  Ramond charge  $q_R = +\frac{1}{2}$  and for  $d$  odd one  $q_R = 0$ . For  $d \geq 4$  this looks odd since one expects the largest  $q_R$  to have multiplicity 1 because it should correspond to a spectral flow of the identity operator. However this argument can be circumvented in several ways: e.g. one may think that some couplings get weak in the UV and the fixed point consists of several decoupled sectors; in this case in the UV limit we may get a distinct spectral flow of the identity for each decoupled sector.

We adopt the following attitude: we know for certain that the Ising  $d$ -point functions exist and are pretty regular; this proves beyond all doubt that the  $tt^*$  geometry with Stokes matrix (4.131) does exist and is well behaved, even if it does not fit in the intuition from experience with LG models whose superpotential is an entire function in  $\mathbb{C}^N$ .

There is another issue which may look tricky. Let us consider the one-dimensional subspace of  $\mathcal{U} \subset \mathcal{X}$  given by  $w_i = \lambda w_i^0$  for some fixed (generic)  $w_i^0$ . The pulled-back connection

$$\frac{d\lambda}{\lambda} \sum_{i < j} B_{ij} \tag{4.135}$$

should agree with the connection along the “RG flow”. For the  $d$ -point Ising functions the matrix  $\sum_{i < j} B_{ij}$  does not coincide with the UV limit of the new index  $Q$  as one would expect. However, when comparing two connections we should content ourselves to check that they are gauge-equivalent, not identical. For flat connections this means they need to have the same monodromy up to conjugacy. In addition, we need to remember that to get a nice UV limit we twisted the vacuum bundle by factors of the form

$$h_i^{1/2} = \text{const.} \prod_{j \neq i} (w_i - w_j)^{1/2} \propto \lambda^{(d-1)/2}, \tag{4.136}$$

so that as  $\lambda \rightarrow e^{2\pi i} \lambda$  we pick up an extra  $(-1)^{d-1}$ . Then consistency merely requires

$$\text{eigenvalues} \left[ e^{2\pi i Q} \right] = (-1)^{d-1} \text{eigenvalues} \left[ \exp \left( 2\pi i \sum_{i < j} B_{ij} \right) \right], \tag{4.137}$$

which holds identically.

#### 4.9 Relation with the Vafa proposal for FQHE

Let us compare the above discussion of the effective  $\mathcal{Q}$  theory in the  $w$ -plane with the Vafa proposal for FQHE. As stated in the introduction around eq. (1.4), the microscopic dynamics of the  $N$  electrons should produce an effective QFT for the quasi-hole “fields”.

Now we have a natural candidate for the effective macroscopic description expected on physical grounds, namely the  $\mathcal{Q}$  theory. The idea is that (1.4) and (4.39) should be identified. The identification works *provided* the  $tt^*$  geometry is very complete, so that the spaces in which we insert the operators  $h(w)$  and  $\mathcal{O}(w)$  are identified. Thus, to close the circle of ideas, it remains to show that the Vafa models have very complete  $tt^*$  geometries (and work out their specific details). Before going to that, we need to develop some other tool in  $tt^*$  geometry specific to the LG model of the Vafa class.

## 5 Advanced $tt^*$ geometry II

### 5.1 Symmetry and statistics

For simplicity, in this subsection we assume the target space of our LG model to be  $\mathbb{C}^N$ .

Suppose the superpotential is invariant under permutations of the chiral fields

$$\mathcal{W}(z_1, \dots, z_N) = \mathcal{W}(z_{\sigma(1)}, \dots, z_{\sigma(N)}), \quad \sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_N. \quad (5.1)$$

$\mathfrak{S}_N$  is a symmetry of the SQM, so the vacuum space carries a unitary representation of the symmetric group. Hence the vacuum bundle  $\mathcal{V}$  and the chiral ring  $\mathcal{R} \subset \text{End } \mathcal{V}$  have parallel orthogonal decompositions

$$\mathcal{V} = \bigoplus_{\eta \in \text{Irrep}(\mathfrak{S}_N)} \mathcal{V}_\eta, \quad \mathcal{R} = \bigoplus_{\eta \in \text{Irrep}(\mathfrak{S}_N)} \mathcal{R}_\eta. \quad (5.2)$$

The component associated to the trivial representation,  $\mathcal{R}_s$ , is a ring, while for all  $\eta$ ,  $\mathcal{R}_\eta$  is a  $\mathcal{R}_s$ -module. The linear isomorphism  $\mathcal{R} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathcal{V}$  becomes

$$\mathcal{R}_\eta \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathcal{V}_{\mathbf{a}, \eta} \quad \text{as } \mathcal{R}_s\text{-modules}, \quad (5.3)$$

where  $\mathbf{a}$  is the sign representation. This follows from the explicit form of the isomorphism

$$\phi \mapsto \phi dz_1 \wedge dz_2 \wedge \dots \wedge dz_N + \bar{Q}(\text{something}), \quad (5.4)$$

and the fact that  $dz_1 \wedge \dots \wedge dz_N$  belongs to the sign representation.

We define the *Fermi* (resp. *Bose*) model to be the one obtained by restricting  $\mathcal{V}$  to its symmetric (resp. antisymmetric) component  $\mathcal{V}_s$  (resp.  $\mathcal{V}_\mathbf{a}$ ). To call “fermionic” the model having symmetric wave-functions may look odd. To justify our definition let us count the number of ground states in an important special case.

#### 5.1.1 Special case: $N$ non-interacting copies

Suppose we have a one-particle superpotential  $W(z)$  with  $d$  vacua and let  $f_j(z)$  ( $j = 1, \dots, d$ ) be a set of holomorphic functions giving a basis for the one-particle chiral ring. We consider  $N$  non-interacting copies of the model

$$\mathcal{W}(z_1, \dots, z_N) = \sum_{i=1}^N W(z_i). \quad (5.5)$$

The chiral ring of the  $N$ -particle model is  $\mathcal{R} = \otimes^N \mathcal{R}_1$  with  $\mathcal{R}_1$  the one-particle chiral ring. Then

$$\mathcal{R}_\mathbf{a} = \wedge^N \mathcal{R}_1, \quad \mathcal{R}_s = \odot^N \mathcal{R}_1. \quad (5.6)$$

If  $\dim \mathcal{R}_1 = d$ , the number of anti-symmetric resp. symmetric elements of  $\mathcal{R}$  is

$$\dim \mathcal{R}_\mathbf{a} = \binom{d}{N} \quad \dim \mathcal{R}_s = \binom{N+d-1}{N} \quad (5.7)$$

which correspond, respectively, to Fermi and Bose statistics. Using the basic spectral-flow isomorphism  $\mathcal{R} \cong \mathcal{V}$ , we get the linear isomorphisms

$$\mathcal{V}_F \cong \wedge^N \mathcal{V}_1, \quad \mathcal{V}_B \cong \odot^N \mathcal{V}_1, \tag{5.8}$$

and the  $tt^*$  metric, connection and brane amplitudes are the ones induced from the corresponding one-particle quantities. The group  $\mathfrak{S}_N$  acts on the sub-spaces of  $\otimes^N \mathcal{V}_1$  as

$$v_1 \otimes v_2 \otimes \cdots \otimes v_N \rightarrow \text{sign}(\sigma) v_{\sigma(1)} \otimes v_{\sigma(2)} \otimes \cdots \otimes v_{\sigma(N)}, \quad \sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_N. \tag{5.9}$$

**Remark.** Eqs. (5.7) remain true if we add to the superpotential (5.5) arbitrary supersymmetric interactions (which do not change the behaviour at infinity in field space) since the dimension of the chiral ring is the Witten index  $d$ .

### 5.1.2 The Fermi model chiral ring

We return to the general case, eq. (5.1).

The elements of the  $\mathcal{R}_s$ -module  $\mathcal{R}_a$  have the form

$$\phi \Delta(z_i) \in \mathcal{R}, \quad \text{where } \Delta(z_i) = \prod_{i < j} (z_i - z_j) \text{ and } \phi \in \mathcal{R}_s. \tag{5.10}$$

The chiral ring of the Fermi model is then

$$\mathcal{R}_F = \mathcal{R}_s / \mathcal{I}_{\text{Van}} \tag{5.11}$$

where  $\mathcal{I}_{\text{Van}} \subset \mathcal{R}_s$  is the annihilator ideal of the Vandermonde determinant  $\Delta(z_i)$ . We have the linear isomorphism

$$\mathcal{R}_F \cong \mathcal{V}_s \equiv \mathcal{V}_F, \quad \dim \mathcal{R}_F = \binom{d}{N}. \tag{5.12}$$

## 5.2 $tt^*$ functoriality and the Fermi model

$tt^*$  functoriality [3, 5] yields a more convenient interpretation of the Fermi model.

### 5.2.1 Review of $tt^*$ functoriality

Suppose the superpotential map  $W_x: \mathcal{K} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$  factorizes through a Stein space  $\mathcal{S}$  for all values of the couplings  $x \in \mathcal{X}$

$$\begin{array}{ccccc}
 & & W_x & & \\
 & & \curvearrowright & & \\
 \mathcal{K} & \xrightarrow{f} & \mathcal{S} & \xrightarrow{V_x} & \mathbb{C}
 \end{array} \tag{5.13}$$

where  $f: \mathcal{K} \rightarrow \mathcal{S}$  is a (possibly branched) cover independent of  $x$ . We wish to compare the  $tt^*$  geometry over  $\mathcal{X}$  of the LG model  $(\mathcal{S}, V_x)$  with the original one  $(\mathcal{K}, W_x)$ . Let<sup>65</sup>

$$\psi = \phi ds_1 \wedge \cdots \wedge ds_N + (\bar{\partial} + dV_x \wedge) \eta \in \Lambda^1(\mathcal{S}) \tag{5.14}$$

---

<sup>65</sup>The  $s_i$ 's are coordinates on  $\mathcal{S}$ .



be a vacuum wave-function of  $(\mathcal{S}, V_x)$ . The pull-back  $f^*\psi$  is  $(\bar{\partial} + dW_x)$ -closed in  $\mathcal{K}$  and not  $(\bar{\partial} + dW_x)$ -exact, hence cohomologous to a vacuum wave-form<sup>66</sup> of  $(\mathcal{K}, W_x)$ . Comparing  $\overline{Q}$ -classes, we see that the pulled-back vacuum is the spectral flow of the chiral operator [3]

$$f^*(\phi) \det[\partial s_i / \partial z_j] \in \mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{K}}. \tag{5.15}$$

The linear map

$$f^\sharp: \mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{S}} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{K}}, \quad \phi \mapsto f^*(\phi) \det[\partial s / \partial z] \tag{5.16}$$

is an isometry of topological metrics

$$\langle f^\sharp(\phi_1) f^\sharp(\phi_2) \rangle_{\mathcal{K}}^{\text{top}} = \langle \phi_1 \phi_2 \rangle_{\mathcal{S}}^{\text{top}} \tag{5.17}$$

compatible with the  $\mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{S}}$ -module structures

$$f^\sharp(\phi_1 \cdot \phi_2) = f^*(\phi_1) \cdot f^\sharp(\phi_2) \in \mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{K}}. \tag{5.18}$$

Write

$$\mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{K}} = f^\sharp(\mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{S}}) \oplus f^\sharp(\mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{S}})^\perp. \tag{5.19}$$

where  $(\cdot)^\perp$  stands for the orthogonal complement in the  $tt^*$  metric.  $tt^*$  functoriality is the statement that  $f^\sharp: \mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{S}} \rightarrow f^\sharp(\mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{S}})$  is an isometry also for the  $tt^*$  metric. To show this fact, one has to check two elements: 1) the two  $tt^*$  metrics solve the same  $tt^*$  PDEs, and 2) they satisfy the same boundary conditions. Since the classes in  $\mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{K}}$  of the operators  $\partial_{x_a} \mathcal{W}$  belong to the sub-space  $f^\sharp(\mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{S}}) \subset \mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{K}}$ , the first assertion follows from eqs. (5.18) and (5.17). The boundary conditions which select the correct solution to these PDEs are encoded in the 2d BPS soliton multiplicities [5]. The BPS solitons are the connected preimages of straight lines in the  $W$ -plane ending at critical points [5, 13]. Since the map  $W_x$  factorizes through  $V_x$  (cfr. eq. (5.13)) so do the counterimages of straight lines, and the counting of solitons agrees in the two theories.

**Definition.** A  $tt^*$ -duality between two 4-SUSY theories is a Frobenius algebra isomorphism between their chiral rings

$$\mathcal{R}_1 \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathcal{R}_2 \tag{5.20}$$

which is an isometry for the  $tt^*$  metric (hence for the BPS brane amplitudes).

$tt^*$  functoriality produces several interesting  $tt^*$ -dual pairs. See section 5.3 for examples. The standard lore is that  $tt^*$ -duality implies equivalence of the full quantum theories for an appropriate choice of the respective  $D$ -terms. Thus  $tt^*$  functoriality is a powerful technique to produce new quantum dualities.

---

<sup>66</sup>In general, the actual wave functions are not given by the pull back since the  $D$ -terms do not agree. In the case of one-field the vacuum Schroedinger equation does not contain the Kähler metric, and the exact wave-function on  $\mathcal{K}$  is the pull back of the one on  $\mathcal{S}$  [17].

### 5.2.2 Application to Fermi statistics

If the superpotential  $\mathcal{W}(z_1, \dots, z_N)$  is invariant under  $\mathfrak{S}_N$ , it can be rewritten as a function of the elementary symmetric functions

$$\mathcal{W}(z_1, \dots, z_N) \rightsquigarrow \mathcal{W}(e_1, e_2, \dots, e_N) \tag{5.21}$$

where

$$e_k := \sum_{1 \leq i_1 < i_2 < \dots < i_k \leq N} z_{i_1} z_{i_2} \dots z_{i_k}, \quad e_0 := 1. \tag{5.22}$$

The superpotential  $\mathcal{W}: \mathbb{C}^N \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$  factorizes through the branched cover map of degree  $N!$

$$E: \mathbb{C}^N \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^N, \quad E: (z_1, \dots, z_N) \mapsto (e_1, \dots, e_N). \tag{5.23}$$

One pulls back the SUSY vacua of the LG model with superpotential  $\mathcal{W}(e_i)$

$$E^* \left( h(e_k) de_1 \wedge de_N + \overline{Q}(\dots) \right) = h(e_k(z_j)) \Delta(z_j) dz_1 \wedge \dots \wedge dz_N + \overline{Q}(\dots), \tag{5.24}$$

getting non-trivial  $\overline{Q}$ -cohomology classes, hence vacua of the  $\mathcal{W}(z_k)$  theory up to  $\overline{Q}$ -trivial terms. Then the pull back yields a correspondence

$$E^\sharp: |h\rangle_e \mapsto |h\Delta\rangle_z, \quad h \in \mathcal{R}_e \equiv \mathbb{C}[e_1, \dots, e_N] / (\partial_{e_1} \mathcal{W}, \dots, \partial_{e_N} \mathcal{W}), \tag{5.25}$$

which is an isometry for the underlying TFT metric

$$\langle h_1 h_2 \rangle_e^{\text{top}} = \langle h_1 \Delta h_2 \Delta \rangle_z^{\text{top}} \tag{5.26}$$

and

$$E^\sharp(\mathcal{R}_e) \cong \mathcal{R}_s / \mathcal{I}_{\text{Van}} \equiv \mathcal{R}_F, \tag{5.27}$$

(cfr. eq. (5.12)).

In other words,  $E^\sharp$  sets an equivalence between the TFT of the  $\mathcal{W}(e_k)$  model and the TFT of the Fermi sector of the  $\mathcal{W}(z_j)$  model. By the arguments in section 5.2.1,  $E^\sharp$  is also isometry of  $tt^*$  metrics and hence of brane amplitudes.

### 5.3 Examples of $tt^*$ -dualities

$tt^*$  functoriality relates the fermionic version of a  $N$ -field LG model to some other 2d (2,2) supersymmetric system. In this subsection we present several examples of such  $tt^*$ -dualities. Only the first one will be referred to in the rest of the paper; the following examples may be safely skipped.

**Example 15** (The  $\nu = 1$  model). Consider the Fermi version of the LG model

$$\mathcal{W}(z_1, \dots, z_N) = \sum_{i=1}^N \left( \mu z_i + \sum_{a=1}^N m_a \log(z_i + x_a) \right) \tag{5.28}$$

( $x_a$  all distinct) which has  $\dim \mathcal{R}_F = 1$ . It is clear from the discussion in section 2 that the Fermi model (5.28) with  $m_a = -1$  describes the  $\nu = 1$  phase of the quantum Hall effect.

We combine the chiral fields  $e_k = e_k(z_j)$  in the chiral-superfield valued polynomial

$$P(y; e_k) = \sum_{k=0}^N e_{N-k} y^k, \tag{5.29}$$

$y$  being an indeterminate. The superpotential of the Fermi model then reads

$$\mathcal{W}(e_1, \dots, e_N) = \mu e_1 + \sum_{a=1}^N m_a \log P(x_a; e_k). \tag{5.30}$$

The chiral superfields  $u_a \equiv P(x_a; e_k)$  are  $N$  linearly independent linear combinations of the  $N$  chiral superfields  $e_k$ ; by a linear field redefinition we can take the  $u_a$  to be the fundamental fields.  $e_1$  is a certain linear combination of the  $u_a$ ; by rescaling the  $u_a$ 's we may write  $e_1 = u_1 + \dots + u_N + \text{const.}$  Then<sup>67</sup>

$$\mathcal{W}(u_1, \dots, u_N) = \sum_{a=1}^N \left( \mu u_a + m_a \log u_a \right) \tag{5.31}$$

i.e. the  $\nu = 1$  Fermi models is equivalent to  $N$  non-interacting copies of the one-field ‘‘Penner’’ model  $W(u) = \mu u + m \log u$ . Next,  $tt^*$  functoriality with respect to the plane-to-cylinder cover map

$$x_a \mapsto e^{x_a} \equiv \mu u_a \tag{5.32}$$

sets a  $tt^*$ -duality between the  $\nu = 1$  Fermi system (5.28) and  $N$  free twisted chiral supermultiplets with twisted masses equal to the residues  $m_a$  of the one-field rational differential  $dW = (\mu + \sum_a m_a (z + x_a)^{-1}) dz$ . The final superpotential is

$$\mathcal{W}(x_1, \dots, x_N) = \sum_{a=1}^N \left( e^{x_a} + m_a x_a \right), \tag{5.33}$$

whose  $tt^*$  equations were explicitly solved in [6, 7, 59]. We shall return to this basic example below.

**Example 16** (Polynomial  $\nu = 1$  models). We may consider  $N$  non-interacting copies of other LG systems with Witten index  $N$  (so that  $\nu = 1$ ) getting similar conclusion. For instance, we may take the one-field differential  $dW$  to have a single pole of order  $N + 2$  at infinity

$$\mathcal{W}(z_1, \dots, z_N) = \sum_{i=1}^N P_{N+1}(z_i) \tag{5.34}$$

where

$$P_{N+1}(z) = z^{N+1} + \sum_{k=1}^{N+1} t_k z^{N+1-k} \tag{5.35}$$

---

<sup>67</sup>When writing superpotentials, we usually omit additive field-independent constants.

is an arbitrary monic polynomial of degree  $N + 1$  which we take to be odd for definiteness. The Newton identities yield

$$\mathcal{W}(e_1, \dots, e_N) = \sum_{k=1}^{N/2} e_k \left( -(N + 1) e_{N+1-k} + A_k(e_1, \dots, e_{N-k}) \right) \quad (5.36)$$

for some polynomial  $A_k(e_1, \dots, e_{N-k})$  which depends on the  $t_j$ 's. The field redefinition

$$u_k = -(N + 1) e_{N+1-k} + A_k(e_1, \dots, e_{N-k}), \quad (5.37)$$

which has constant Jacobian, reduces the Fermi model to  $N$  copies of the free Gaussian theory

$$\mathcal{W}(e_1, \dots, e_{N/2}, u_1, \dots, u_{N/2}) = \sum_{k=1}^{N/2} e_k u_k \quad (5.38)$$

which has a single vacuum. That the  $tt^*$  metric of the original Fermi model coincides with the one for the Gaussian theory is easily checked: the  $tt^*$  metric of the  $\nu = 1$  Fermi model is the determinant of the one-field  $tt^*$  metric (cfr. (5.8)); from the reality constraint [3]  $\det g$  is just the absolute value of the determinant of the topological metric  $|\det \eta|$ .  $\eta$  may be set to 1 by a change of holomorphic trivialization [8]. The covering  $E$  automatically implements such a trivialization. The wave-function of the unique vacuum of the Gaussian model (5.38), when written in terms of the original chiral fields  $z_i$ , has the form

$$\prod_{i < j} (z_i - z_j) dz_1 \wedge \dots \wedge dz_N + \bar{Q}(\dots). \quad (5.39)$$

This wave-function is cohomologous to the one obtained solving the Schroedinger equation in the original Fermi model, but not equal since the covering map  $E$  implicitly involves a deformation of the  $D$ -terms. The  $tt^*$  metric, i.e. the Hermitian structure of the vacuum bundle is correctly reproduced since it is independent of the  $D$ -terms.

We stress that the Vandermonde factor in the wave-function (5.39) is produced by the cover map  $E$ , not by an interaction in the superpotential. This is physically correct, since this is the wave-function at  $\nu = 1$  of a  $N$  *non-interacting* fermions. In particular,  $tt^*$  functoriality automatically yields the correct  $\nu = 1$  Laughlin wave-function [24].

**Example 17.** More generally, we may take the rational differential  $dW$  to have a pole of order  $\ell + 2$  at infinity and  $N - \ell > 0$  simple poles in  $\mathbb{C}$  with residues  $m_a$ ; the corresponding Fermi model is reduced by  $tt^*$  functoriality to a non-interacting system of  $\ell$  ordinary free massive chiral multiplets and  $N - \ell$  twisted ones

$$\mathcal{W}(x_i) = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{a=1}^{\ell} x_a^2 + \sum_{a=\ell+1}^N \left( e^{x_a} + m_a x_a \right). \quad (5.40)$$

We may also consider the special cases  $\ell = -1, -2$  (such models may be plagued by runaway vacua at  $\infty$ ). If  $\ell = -1$  and  $dW$  has only simple poles of residues  $m_a$ , going through

the same steps as in example 15, we get

$$\mathcal{W}(u_1, \dots, u_N) = \sum_{a=1}^N m_a \log u_a + m_0 \log \left( \sum_{a=1}^N u_a + \lambda \right). \quad (5.41)$$

Comparing this expression with eq. (5.31), we see that already for  $\nu = 1$  assuming  $dW$  to have a double pole at  $\infty$  leads to a nice simplification (besides of making the model better defined).

**Example 18** ( $tt^*$  particle-hole duality). We consider the case we have  $N$  (super-)particles  $z_i$  and  $d = N + 1$  (vacuum) one-particles states, so the Fermi statistics (5.7) yields  $N + 1$  vacua, which may be seen as single-hole states. For simplicity, we consider the model

$$\mathcal{W}(z_1, \dots, z_N) = \sum_{i=1}^N P_{N+2}(z_i), \quad (5.42)$$

where  $P_{N+2}(z)$  is any polynomial of degree  $N + 2$ . Going through the same steps as in example 16, we get (say for  $N$  even)

$$\mathcal{W} = P_{N+2}(e_1) + \sum_{k=2}^{N/2} e_k u_k, \quad (5.43)$$

so, integrating away the free massive d.o.f., we get back the original one-particle model. The  $tt^*$  geometry of the model with one hole is the same one as for the model with one particle. More generally, the  $tt^*$  geometry of the Fermi model of  $N$  copies of a LG model with  $d$  vacua, is invariant under

$$N \leftrightarrow d - N. \quad (5.44)$$

**Example 19** (Grassmanian  $\sigma$ -models). In ref. [5] it was shown that the Fermi model of  $N$  copies of the  $\sigma$ -model with target  $\mathbb{P}^{M-1}$  is  $tt^*$ -dual to the  $\sigma$ -model with target space the Grassmanian

$$\text{Gr}(M, N) = \text{SU}(M) / \text{U}(N) \times \text{SU}(M - N). \quad (5.45)$$

#### 5.4 Fermi statistics vs. Hecke algebras representations

We consider the Fermi model of  $N$  decoupled LG systems

$$\mathcal{W}(e_k) = \sum_{i=1}^N W(z_i) \quad (5.46)$$

where the rational differential  $dW$  has  $d \geq N$  zeros. In addition we assume that the one-field theory  $W(z)$  yields a very complete symmetric  $tt^*$  geometry, so the results of section 4.5 apply.

The vacuum bundle of the  $N$ -particle model is

$$\mathcal{V}_N \cong \wedge^N \mathcal{V}_1 \rightarrow \mathcal{X}, \quad (5.47)$$

and its UV Berry connection is just the one induced in the  $N$ -index antisymmetric representation by the one-particle UV Berry connection. It is convenient to introduce the “Grand-canonical” bundle

$$\mathscr{W} := \bigoplus_{N=0}^d \mathscr{V}_N \rightarrow \mathscr{X}, \quad \text{rank } \mathscr{W} = \sum_{N=0}^d \binom{d}{N} = 2^d. \quad (5.48)$$

The total number of states is  $2^d$  since each of the  $d$  one-particle (vacuum) states may be either empty or occupied.

**Remark.** In (5.48) we added a direct summand  $\mathscr{V}_0$  which does not correspond to any LG model (the number of chiral fields  $N$  is zero). This can be done without harm since by the particle-hole duality (example 18) the extra summand is  $\mathscr{V}_0 \cong \mathscr{V}_N$ , i.e. the trivial line bundle.

In section 4.5 we associated a spin degree of freedom  $s_\ell^{(j)}$  ( $\ell = 1, 2, 3$ ) to the  $j$ -th one-particle vacuum: spin down  $\downarrow$  (up  $\uparrow$ ) meaning that the  $j$ -th state is empty (resp. occupied). Then

$$\text{fiber}(\mathscr{W}) \cong \mathbf{V}^{(1)} \otimes \dots \otimes \mathbf{V}^{(d)} \equiv \mathbf{V}^{\otimes d}, \quad (5.49)$$

where  $\mathbf{V}^{(j)} \cong \mathbb{C}^2$  is the space on which the  $s_\ell^{(j)}$  act. A vacuum with occupied states  $\{j_1, j_2, \dots, j_N\}$

$$\downarrow_1 \otimes \dots \otimes \downarrow_{j_1-1} \otimes \uparrow_{j_1} \otimes \downarrow_{j_1+1} \otimes \dots \otimes \downarrow_{j_N-1} \otimes \uparrow_{j_N} \otimes \downarrow_{j_N+1} \otimes \dots \otimes \downarrow_N \quad N > 0 \quad (5.50)$$

corresponds (linearly) to the element of the  $N$ -particle chiral ring

$$\sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_N} \text{sign}(\sigma) E_{j_1}(z_{\sigma(1)}) E_{j_2}(z_{\sigma(2)}) \dots E_{j_N}(z_{\sigma(N)}) \in (\mathscr{R}_N)_{\mathbf{a}}, \quad (5.51)$$

where  $\{E_j(z)\}_{j=1}^d$  is the canonical basis of the one-particle chiral ring  $\mathscr{R}_1$ . Note that the operators  $s_\ell^{(j)}$  for  $\ell \neq 3$  are not defined at the level of the single LG model with a definite number of chiral fields  $N$ .

Comparing (5.49) with eq. (4.104)

$$\mathscr{W} \cong \mathscr{V}, \quad (5.52)$$

and the linear PDEs satisfied by the “grand-canonical” brane amplitudes  $\Psi$  is just the  $\mathfrak{sl}(2)$  Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov equation up to twist by “normalization” factors. In  $\mathscr{W}$  one defines the operator number of particles as

$$\hat{N} := L_3 + \frac{d}{2}, \quad \text{where } L_\ell = \sum_{j=1}^d s_\ell^{(j)} \quad (\text{generators of } \mathfrak{sl}(2)_{\text{diag}}). \quad (5.53)$$

The underlying one-particle model, having a very complete symmetric  $tt^*$  geometry, defines a Kohno connection acting on  $\mathbf{V}^{\otimes d}$  that we argued has the  $\mathfrak{sl}(2)$  KZ form up to an overall twist, i.e.

$$\mathcal{D} = d + \lambda \sum_{i < j} s_\ell^{(i)} s_\ell^{(j)} \frac{d(w_i - w_j)}{w_i - w_j} + \xi \sum_{i < j} d \log(w_i - w_j) \quad (5.54)$$

for some constants  $\lambda$  and  $\xi$ . We shall see momentarily that the constant  $\xi$  is related to  $\lambda$ .

The eigen-subbundles  $\mathcal{V}_N \equiv \ker(\hat{N} - N) \subset \mathcal{W}$  are preserved by parallel transport with  $\mathcal{D}$ , and hence define a monodromy representation  $\pi_1(\mathcal{X})$  (also denoted<sup>68</sup> by  $\mathcal{V}_N$ ) which is the one associated to the  $N$ -field Fermi theory (5.46). For most  $N$ 's this representation is highly reducible. Indeed, the eigen-bundles of the operator  $L^2 \equiv L_\ell L_\ell$  are also preserved by parallel transport. So one has the monodromy invariant decomposition

$$\mathcal{W} = \bigoplus_{\substack{l=0 \\ l=d/2 \bmod 1}}^{d/2} \bigoplus_{m=-l}^l \mathcal{V}_{l,m}, \quad \mathcal{V}_{l,m} := \ker(L^2 - l(l+1)) \cap \ker(L_3 - m), \quad (5.55)$$

and

$$\mathcal{V}_N = \bigoplus_{l=|N-d/2|}^{d/2} \mathcal{V}_{l,m \equiv N-d/2}. \quad (5.56)$$

Since  $\mathfrak{sl}(2)_{\text{diag}}$  centralizes the monodromy representation

$$\mathcal{V}_{l,m} \cong \mathcal{V}_{l,m'} \quad \text{for } -l \leq m, m' \leq l, \quad (5.57)$$

in particular the monodromy representations  $\mathcal{V}_N, \mathcal{V}_{d-N}$  are isomorphic. This is a manifestation of the particle-hole duality in Fermi statistics explicitly realized in terms of the  $tt^*$ -dualities described in section 5.3. The non-zero eigenbundles  $\mathcal{V}_{l,m}$  have ranks given by the Catalan triangle

$$\text{rank } \mathcal{V}_{l,m} = \binom{d}{\frac{d}{2} - l} - \binom{d}{\frac{d}{2} - l - 1} \quad \text{for } \begin{cases} 0 \leq l \leq d/2, l = d/2 \bmod 1, \\ -l \leq m \leq l, l = m \bmod 1. \end{cases} \quad (5.58)$$

The eigen-bundle  $\mathcal{V}_{d/2, N-d/2}$  has rank 1, i.e. it contains a unique monodromy invariant vacuum  $|d/2, N-d/2\rangle$ .  $|d/2, N-d/2\rangle$  is a “preferred” vacuum for the Fermi model with  $N$ -fields. It is tempting to identify it with the one discussed in section 2.3. The fact that it is invariant under the monodromy representation is already a strong suggestion that this is the case.

For a fixed number of particles  $N$  the determinant of the brane amplitudes,  $\det \Psi$ , is a constant section of the line-bundle

$$\det \wedge^N \mathcal{V}_1 \cong \mathcal{V}_{d/2, N-d/2} \quad \left( \cong \mathcal{V}_{d/2, d/2} \right) \quad (5.59)$$

corresponding to the preferred vacuum for the  $N$ -particle Fermi model. The overall twist  $\xi$  in eq. (5.54) is fixed by the requirement that the preferred vacuum has trivial monodromy. This fixes  $\xi$  in terms of  $\lambda$

$$\xi = -\frac{\lambda}{4}. \quad (5.60)$$

In other words, the normalized amplitudes  $\Psi_{\text{norm}}$  are related to the KZ ones  $\Psi$  by the formula

$$\Psi_{\text{norm}} = \frac{\Psi}{\Psi_{\text{priv}}} \quad (5.61)$$

with  $\Psi_{\text{priv}}$  a parallel section of the line-bundle  $\mathcal{V}_{d/2, d/2}$ . In particular the normalized monodromy is trivial for the  $\nu = 1$  case.

---

<sup>68</sup>When no confusion is possible, we identify the monodromy representation with its representation space.

### 5.5 Relation with the Heine-Stieltjes theory

We consider a LG model with  $N$  chiral fields with superpotential differential

$$dW = 2\beta \sum_{1 \leq i < j \leq N} \frac{d(z_i - z_j)}{z_i - z_j} + \sum_{i=1}^N dW(z_i), \quad (5.62)$$

where  $dW(z_i)$  is a rational differential with  $d$  zeros and a pole of order  $1 \leq \ell \leq d + 2$  at  $\infty$ . Generically,  $dW$  has  $p \equiv d + 2 - \ell$  simple poles at finite points  $\{y_1, \dots, y_p\} \subset \mathbb{C}$  (all distinct), i.e.

$$dW(z) = \frac{B(z)}{A(z)} dz, \quad \text{where } A(z) \equiv \prod_{s=1}^p (z - y_s), \quad (5.63)$$

for some degree  $d$  polynomial  $B(z)$  coprime with  $A(z)$ . The LG model proposed by Vafa to describe FQHE has the form (5.62) with the residues of  $dW$  equal  $\pm 1$  and  $2\beta = 1/\nu$ .

We think of this model as defined on the quotient Kähler manifold

$$\mathcal{K} = \left\{ (z_1, \dots, z_N) \in (\mathbb{C} \setminus \{y_1, \dots, y_p\})^N \mid z_i \neq z_j \text{ for } i \neq j \right\} / \mathfrak{S}_N. \quad (5.64)$$

$\mathcal{K}$  is affine (hence Stein). Indeed, the basic chiral fields are the elementary symmetric functions,  $e_k = e_k(z_j)$ ; we identify the field configuration  $(e_1, \dots, e_N)$  configuration with the degree  $N$  monic polynomial

$$P(z) = P(z; e_k) \equiv \sum_{k=0}^N (-1)^k e_{N-k} z^k, \quad e_0 = 1. \quad (5.65)$$

Then

$$\mathcal{K} \cong \mathbb{C}^N \setminus S \quad (5.66)$$

where  $S$  is the hypersurface (divisor)

$$S \equiv \left\{ \text{discr}(P) \text{Res}(A, P) = 0 \right\} \subset \mathbb{C}^N, \quad (5.67)$$

where  $\text{discr}(P)$  and  $\text{Res}(A, P)$  are the discriminant and the resultant of the polynomials seen as functions of the coefficients  $e_1, \dots, e_N$  of  $P(z)$  for fixed  $A(z)$ .

A vacuum configuration of the model (5.62) defined on the quotient manifold  $\mathcal{K}$  (i.e. up to  $\mathfrak{S}_N$  action) is described by a degree  $N$  monic polynomial  $P(z) \equiv P(z; e_k)$  as in eq. (5.65) which satisfies the Heine-Stieltjes differential equation

$$2\beta A(z) P''(z) + B(z) P'(z) = f(z) P(z) \quad (5.68)$$

where  $f(z)$  is a polynomial of degree  $d-1$ . The degree  $N$  polynomials  $P(z)$  which solve this equation for some  $f(z)$  are called *Stieltjes polynomials*; to each of them there corresponds a degree  $d-1$  polynomial  $f(z)$ , called its associated *van Vleck polynomial*. The Heine-Stieltjes theory is reviewed in the context of  $tt^*$  in ref. [6]. We refer to the vast literature [98–122] for further details.



If  $dW$  is a generic rational differential, with just simple poles in  $\mathbb{P}^1$ , eq. (5.68) is a generalized  $d$ -Lamé equation. The  $d$ -Lamé equation [114] is the special case  $\beta = 1$  and  $dW = d \log Q(z)$ , where  $Q(z)$  is a polynomial (which we may choose square-free and monic with no loss) of degree  $d$ . Taking the same differential  $dW$ , but choosing  $\beta = -1$ , the superpotential  $\mathcal{W}$  in eq. (5.62) becomes the Yang-Yang [48, 123] functional (and its exponential the master function [124, 125]) of the  $\mathfrak{sl}(2)$  Gaudin integrable model on  $\mathbf{V}^{\otimes d}$ , the Heine-Stieltjes equation is equivalent to the corresponding algebraic Bethe ansatz equations, and the roots of  $P(z)$  are the Bethe roots [48, 126].

The case most relevant for us is when precisely one of the poles in  $\mathbb{P}^1$  is double: then the Heine-Stieltjes equation is a *confluent* generalized  $d$ -Lamé equation.<sup>69</sup> The ODE is equivalent to the Bethe ansatz equation for the Gaudin model with an *irregular* singularity [48, 127–129].

Going to the confluent limit is very convenient, as we have already observed. In the Gaiotto-Witten language [48], passing to the confluent limit corresponds to breaking the gauge symmetry by going in the Higgs branch of the 4d  $\mathcal{N} = 4$  gauge theory (“complex” symmetry breaking [48]).

A basic result of Heine-Stieltjes theory states that the number of solutions  $(P(z), f(z))$  of eq. (5.68) is (at most, and generically)

$$d_{d,N} \equiv \binom{N+d-1}{N}. \tag{5.69}$$

By definition, this is also the Witten index of the model  $(\mathcal{K}, \mathcal{W})$  hence, by eq. (3.9), the dimension of the appropriate relative homology group.

By construction [6], solving the Heine-Stieltjes equation (5.68) is equivalent to solving the equation  $d\mathcal{W}$  and considering the solutions modulo  $\mathfrak{S}_N$ . Explicitly,

$$\partial_{z_i} \mathcal{W} = \sum_{j \neq i} \frac{2\beta}{z_i - z_j} + \sum_a \frac{1}{z_i - w_a} - \sum_\ell \frac{1}{z_i - \zeta_\ell} = 0 \tag{5.70}$$

which is a generalization of the Algebraic Bethe Ansatz equation for the Gaudin model (the  $z_i$ ’s are analogue to the Bethe roots). The Gaudin model arises from the semi-classical limit of the solutions to the Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov, and it is natural to expect that the relation remains valid in the present slightly more general context.

**Remark.** In the (related) context [130–132] of large- $N$  matrix models the Heine-Stieltjes equation (5.68) is called the Schroedinger equation.

### 5.6 The fermionic truncation

Following Vafa [1], we wish to interpret the SQM model (5.62) (defined on the quotient manifold  $\mathcal{K}$ ) as modelling  $N$  electrons coupled to  $d$  units of magnetic flux (produced by the

---

<sup>69</sup>For instance, for  $d = 1$  (resp.  $d = 2$ ) one gets the confluent hypergeometric equation (resp. confluent Heun) instead of the hypergeometric (Heun) ODE.

one-particle superpotential form  $dW$  as discussed in section 2.2), while the Vandermonde coupling

$$\mathcal{W} = 2\beta \sum_{i < j} \log(z_i - z_j) + \dots \tag{5.71}$$

models the topologically relevant part of the electron-electron Coulomb interactions. From eq. (5.69) we see that, even if the model is of “Fermi type” in the technical sense of section 5.1, we get the “wrong” counting of states: eq. (5.69) is the multiplicity for Bose statistics not for Fermi one. What happens is clear: for small but non-zero  $\beta$ , in a classical vacuum for (5.62) the  $z_i$ ’s are near a classical vacuum of the one-field model; several  $z_i$  may take distinct values in the vicinity of the same one-field vacuum. Since their values differ by  $O(\beta)$ , such a vacuum corresponds to a non-zero element of  $\mathcal{B}_a$ .

The obvious guess is that — in order to get the correct FQHE phenomenology — one has to consider only the subspace

$$\mathcal{V}_{\text{Fer}} \subset \mathcal{V}, \quad \dim \mathcal{V}_{\text{Fer}} = \binom{d}{N} \tag{5.72}$$

of vacua which survive in the limit  $\beta \rightarrow 0$ . In this limit all other vacua  $|\omega\rangle \in \mathcal{V}_{\text{Fer}}^\perp$  escape to the infinite end of  $\mathcal{K}$ , that is, they fall into the excised divisor  $S$ , cfr. eq. (5.66). The fermionic truncation from  $\mathcal{V}$  to  $\mathcal{V}_{\text{Fer}}$  is geometrically consistent if and only if it is preserved under parallel transport by the  $tt^*$  flat connection, that is, if  $\mathcal{V}_{\text{Fer}}$  is a sub-representation<sup>70</sup> of the monodromy representation. Since the flat  $tt^*$  connection is the Gauss-Manin connection of the local system on  $\mathcal{X}$  provided by the BPS branes (for fixed  $\zeta \in \mathbb{P}^1$ ), this is equivalent to the condition that the model has  $\binom{d}{N}$  preferred branes which remain regular as  $\beta \rightarrow 0$  and span the dual space to  $\mathcal{V}_{\text{Fer}}$ .

Luckily, the fermionic truncation has already been studied by Gaiotto and Witten in a strictly related context, see section 6.5 of [48]. They show that preferred branes with the required monodromy properties do exist. We review their argument in our notation. We assume that the rational one-form  $dW$  has a double pole at infinity of strength  $\mu$  and  $d$  simple poles in general positions. Then

$$B(z) = \mu A(z) + \text{lower degree}, \tag{5.73}$$

and eq. (5.68) becomes

$$2\beta A(z) P''(z) + \left( \mu A(z) + \dots \right) P'(z) = \mu \tilde{f}(z) P(z). \tag{5.74}$$

The monodromy representation is independent of  $\mu$  as long as it is non-zero. One takes  $\mu$  finite but very large (the reasonable regime for FQHE). Up to  $O(1/\mu)$  corrections the zeros of  $P(z)$  coincide with zeros of  $A(z)$  and hence with the zeros of  $B(z)$ . The fermionic truncation amounts to requiring that their multiplicities are at most one, i.e. that the polynomials  $P(z)$  and  $P'(z)$  are coprime. In this regime, the product of  $N$  one-particle

---

<sup>70</sup>Since the integral monodromy representation is not reductive in general,  $\mathcal{V}_{\text{Fer}}$  needs not to be a direct summand of the monodromy representation. However the contraction of the monodromy given by the UV Berry monodromy is reductive, so  $\mathcal{V}_{\text{Fer}}$  must be a direct summand of the UV Berry monodromy.

Lefschetz thimbles starting at *distinct* zeros of  $B(z)$  is approximatively a brane for the full interacting model; while the actual brane differs from the product of one-particle ones by some  $O(1/\mu)$  correction, they agree in homology and this is sufficient for monodromy considerations.

Essentially by construction, the Fermi truncation is equivalent for the purpose of  $tt^*$  monodromy to deleting the Vandermonde interaction from the superpotential (i.e. to setting  $\beta = 0$ ) while inserting a chiral operator of the form  $\Delta(z_i)^{2\tilde{\beta}}$  in the brane amplitudes. Here  $\tilde{\beta}$  is a kind of “renormalized” version of  $\beta$ . To understand this operation we have preliminary to dwell into some other aspects of  $tt^*$  geometry which we discuss next.

### 5.7 $tt^*$ geometry for non-univalued superpotentials

The basic version of  $tt^*$  geometry works under the assumption that the superpotential  $\mathcal{W}$  is an univalued holomorphic function  $\mathcal{K} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ . Supersymmetry only requires the one-form  $d\mathcal{W}$  to be closed and holomorphic, but not necessarily exact. When the periods of the differential  $d\mathcal{W}$  do not vanish, the topological sector of the SQM is non-standard. This aspect is more transparent in the (equivalent) language of the 2d TFT obtained by twisting the 2d (2,2) QFT with the same Kähler target  $\mathcal{K}$  and (multivalued) superpotential  $\mathcal{W}$ . The 2d TFT is well-defined also when  $d\mathcal{W}$  is not exact, but now it is not always true that an infinitesimal variation  $\delta x$  of the parameters entering in  $\mathcal{W}$ ,

$$\delta S_{\text{TFT}} = \delta x \int d^2\theta \partial_x \mathcal{W} + \bar{Q}\text{-exact}, \tag{5.75}$$

is equivalent to the insertion in the topological correlators of a 2-form topological observable  $\int \partial_x \mathcal{W}^{(2)}$ , since  $\partial_x \mathcal{W}$  may be multivalued, and hence not part of the TFT chiral ring  $\mathcal{R}$ . Thus, while the TFT exists, it does not define a structure of Frobenius manifold on the essential coupling space  $\mathcal{X}$ , and the dependence of the topological correlations on the parameters  $x \in \mathcal{X}$  is not controlled by the Frobenius algebra  $\mathcal{R}$ . Since  $tt^*$  geometry is obtained by fusing together the topological and anti-topological sectors, this means that the PDE’s which govern the dependence of the  $tt^*$  amplitudes on  $x$  cannot be written remaining inside  $\mathcal{R}$ : one needs to enlarge  $\mathcal{R}$  to a bigger Frobenius algebra.

#### 5.7.1 Abelian covers

We review the procedure in detail since the Vafa model of FQHE involves all possible subtleties in this story. In this section we work in full generality:  $\mathcal{K}$  is any Stein (hence complete Kähler) field space endowed with a family of holomorphic superpotential one-forms  $d\mathcal{W}_x$ , parametrized by  $x \in \mathcal{X}$ , which are closed but not exact.

An obvious way to get univalued superpotentials  $\mathcal{W}_x$  and reduce ourselves to ordinary  $tt^*$  geometry, is to enlarge the model by replacing the field space  $\mathcal{K}$  by its universal cover  $\tilde{\mathcal{K}} \xrightarrow{u} \mathcal{K}$  endowed with the pulled back superpotential one-form  $u^* d\mathcal{W}_x$  which is automatically exact on  $\tilde{\mathcal{K}}$ . However, typically, this universal extension of the theory introduces insuperable and unnecessary intricacies. A more economic fix is to replace  $\mathcal{K}$  by its universal (Galois) *Abelian* cover  $\mathcal{A}$ , i.e. the cover  $\mathcal{A} \rightarrow \mathcal{K}$  with deck group the Abelianization  $\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}}$  of  $\pi_1(\mathcal{K})$  and

$$\pi_1(\mathcal{A}) = [\pi_1(\mathcal{K}), \pi_1(\mathcal{K})]. \tag{5.76}$$

If  $\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}}$  contains torsion, we may further reduce the cover to  $\mathcal{A}/(\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}})_{\text{tor}}$ . To keep the formulae simple, we assume  $\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}}$  to be torsion-free, and concretely define  $\mathcal{A}$  as the quotient of the space of paths starting at a base point  $* \in \mathcal{K}$  by a suitable equivalence relation

$$\mathcal{A} := \left\{ f: [0, 1] \rightarrow \mathcal{K} \text{ continuous, } f(0) = * \right\} / \sim \quad (5.77)$$

$$f \sim g \iff f(1) = g(1) \text{ and } 0 = [g^{-1}f] \in H_1(\mathcal{K}, \mathbb{Z}), \quad (5.78)$$

endowed with the projection

$$\varpi: \mathcal{A} \rightarrow \mathcal{K}, \quad \varpi: f \mapsto f(1) \in \mathcal{K}. \quad (5.79)$$

The superpotentials  $\mathcal{W}_x$  are well-defined on  $\mathcal{A}$ .  $\mathcal{A}$  is the smallest cover such that *all* superpotentials are defined. By construction, the cover (5.79) is Galois with Galois group the Abelianization of the fundamental group

$$\text{Gal}(\mathcal{A}/\mathcal{K}) \equiv \pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}} \cong \mathbb{Z}^{b_1(\mathcal{K})}, \quad b_1(\mathcal{K}) \equiv 1^{\text{st}} \text{ Betti number of } \mathcal{K}. \quad (5.80)$$

The deck group  $\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}}$  acts freely and transitively on the pre-images of any point, i.e.  $\mathcal{A} \rightarrow \mathcal{K}$  is a principal  $\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}}$ -bundle.  $\mathcal{A}$  is automatically Stein [25]. Since the first Betti number  $b_1(\mathcal{K}) > 0$ , the cover  $\mathcal{A} \rightarrow \mathcal{K}$  has infinite degree, which means that each vacuum of the original SQM defined on  $\mathcal{K}$  has infinitely many pre-images in  $\mathcal{A}$  which are distinct vacua for the Abelian cover SQM, which then has Witten index  $\infty \cdot d$ . Luckily, this additional infinity in the number of vacua causes not much additional trouble.  $\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}}$  acts as a symmetry of the covering quantum system, and hence its vacuum space  $\mathcal{V}_{\mathcal{A}}$  decomposes in the orthogonal direct sum of unitary irreducible representations of  $\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}}$ . The group is Abelian, and all its irreducible representations are one-dimensional. The fiber of (5.79) carries the regular representation of  $\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}}$ , and each irreducible representation appears with the same multiplicity  $d$ . Then we have an orthogonal decomposition of the vacuum bundle  $\mathcal{V}_{\mathcal{A}} \rightarrow \mathcal{K}$  into  $\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}}$  eigen-bundles associated to the irreducible (multiplicative) characters of  $\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}}$ ,

$$\mathcal{V}_{\mathcal{A}} = \bigoplus_{\chi \in \text{Hom}(\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}}, \text{U}(1))} \mathcal{V}_{\chi}, \quad \text{rank } \mathcal{V}_{\chi} = d \text{ for all } \chi. \quad (5.81)$$

This orthogonal decomposition is preserved by parallel transport with the Berry connection  $D$  (since  $D$  is metric), but not in general by the flat connection  $\nabla^{(\zeta)}$ . There are two ways to remedy this. The first is to consider the UV Berry monodromy representation. This contraction of the  $tt^*$  monodromy representation is unitary and metric, hence preserves the orthogonal decomposition (5.81). The second is discussed in section 5.7.2.

Identifying  $\pi_1(\mathcal{A})^{\text{Ab}}$  (modulo torsion) with  $\mathbb{Z}^b$ , we write the characters as

$$\chi_{\vec{\theta}}: \vec{n} \mapsto e^{i\vec{n} \cdot \vec{\theta}}, \quad \vec{n} \in \mathbb{Z}^b \quad (5.82)$$

and call the states in the eigen-bundle  $\mathcal{V}_{\vec{\theta}} \equiv \mathcal{V}_{\chi_{\vec{\theta}}}$  the  $\vec{\theta}$ -vacua [3, 6, 7].

**Example 20.** Consider the SQM with  $\mathcal{K} \equiv \mathbb{C}^\times$  and

$$W(Z) = Z - m \log Z \tag{5.83}$$

where  $m \in \mathcal{X} \equiv \mathbb{C}^\times$ . This is the basic model entering in the description of the  $\nu = 1$  phase of FQHE (cfr. example 15). The Abelian cover of  $\mathcal{K}$  is  $\mathbb{C}$ ,  $\varpi: X \mapsto e^X \equiv Z$ , whose Galois group  $\mathbb{Z}$  acts as  $k: X \mapsto X + 2\pi ik$ ; the corresponding characters are  $\theta: k \mapsto e^{i\theta k}$ ,  $\theta \in [0, 2\pi)$ . Since the model is free, its Witten index is 1, and the representations  $\varrho^\theta: \pi_1(\mathcal{X}) \equiv \mathbb{Z} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^\times$  are one-dimensional. One finds  $\varrho^\theta(s) = e^{is(\theta-\pi)}$  ( $s \in \mathbb{Z}$ ). The vacuum  $|\theta\rangle \in \mathcal{V}_\theta$  is (up to normalization) the one corresponding to the chiral operator  $z^{\theta/2\pi} \in \mathcal{R}_A$ . In particular, the brane amplitudes in character  $\theta$  (which, for the present model, were computed explicitly in [6, 7]) contain the insertion of  $z^{\theta/2\pi}$ , so that the effective mass parameter entering in the asymmetric limit amplitudes is  $m_{\text{eff}} = m - i\zeta\theta/2\pi R$  [6]. The so-called  $\theta$ -limit consists in taking the coupling in the superpotential to zero,  $m \rightarrow 0$ , while keeping  $m_{\text{eff}}$  fixed.

**5.7.2 General Abelian covers**

Let  $H \subset \pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}}$  a subgroup, and let  $\mathcal{A}_H = \mathcal{A}/H$ . We have an Abelian cover

$$\mathcal{A}_H \rightarrow \mathcal{K}, \quad \text{Gal}(\mathcal{A}_H/\mathcal{K}) = \pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}}/H, \tag{5.84}$$

and we may consider the 4-SUSY SQM with target space  $\mathcal{A}_H$  which is well-defined. One has

$$\pi_1(\mathcal{A}_H) = \ker \beta \tag{5.85}$$

where  $\beta$  is the surjective group homomorphism

$$\beta: \pi_1(\mathcal{K}) \equiv \text{Gal}(\tilde{\mathcal{K}}/\mathcal{K}) \rightarrow \text{Gal}(\mathcal{A}_H/\mathcal{K}). \tag{5.86}$$

The SUSY vacua of the LG theory formulated on  $\mathcal{A}_H$  may be identified with the  $H$ -invariant vacua of the universal Abelian covering theory, that is,

$$\mathcal{V}_H = \bigoplus_{\chi: \chi|_H = \text{trivial}} \mathcal{V}_\chi. \tag{5.87}$$

The  $\mathcal{A}_H$  model has its own (generalized) BPS branes, which lift to branes of the cover  $\mathcal{A}$  theory, and its vacuum-to-brane amplitudes are preserved by parallel transport with respect to the  $tt^*$  Lax connection. Thus, even if each  $\mathcal{V}_\chi$  may not be preserved by the brane monodromy representation  $\text{Mon}$ , we have one monodromy sub-representation  $\text{Mon}_H \subset \text{Mon}$  for each subgroup  $H \subset \pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}}$ . This is an important condition on the monodromy representation  $\text{Mon}$ .

In particular, we may choose  $H$  to be of finite index in  $\pi_1(\mathcal{A})^{\text{Ab}}$ , so that  $\text{Gal}(\mathcal{A}_H/\mathcal{K})$  is a finite Abelian torsion group. In this case the theory on  $\mathcal{A}_H$  has finite Witten index

$$d_H = [\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}} : H] \cdot d. \tag{5.88}$$

and we get a family of monodromy representations

$$\varrho_H: \pi_1(\mathcal{X}) \rightarrow \text{GL}(d_H, \mathbb{Z}). \tag{5.89}$$

To a sequence of finite-index subgroups

$$\cdots \subset H_k \subset H_{k-1} \subset \cdots \subset H_1 \subset H_0 \equiv \pi_1(\mathcal{A})^{\text{Ab}} \tag{5.90}$$

there corresponds an inverse sequence of  $tt^*$  monodromy sub-representations

$$\text{Mon}_{H_0} \subset \text{Mon}_{H_1} \subset \cdots \subset \text{Mon}_{H_{k-1}} \subset \text{Mon}_{H_k} \subset \cdots \tag{5.91}$$

where  $\text{Mon}_{H_0}$  is the monodromy representation for the original model defined on  $\mathcal{K}$ .

### 5.7.3 Finite covers vs. normalizable vacua

It follows from the above that not all characters  $\chi \in (\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}})^\vee$  are created equal. Suppose  $\chi$  is torsion, that is,

$$\vec{\theta} \in (2\pi\mathbb{Q})^b, \tag{5.92}$$

and let  $J_\chi \subset (\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}})^\vee$  be the finite cyclic group generated by  $\chi$ , and  $N_\chi = \ker \chi \subset \pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}}$  the corresponding finite-index normal subgroup

$$\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}}/N_\chi \cong J_\chi. \tag{5.93}$$

In this case we may reduce from an infinite to a finite cover

$$\varpi_\chi: \mathcal{A}_\chi \equiv \mathcal{A}/N_\chi \rightarrow \mathcal{K}, \quad \text{Gal}(\mathcal{A}_\chi/\mathcal{K}) = J_\chi, \quad \text{deg } \varpi_\chi = |J_\chi|. \tag{5.94}$$

Such a finite cover (5.94) is much better behaved than  $\varpi$ , e.g. if  $\mathcal{K}$  is affine  $\varpi_\chi$  is a regular morphism of affine varieties.<sup>71</sup>

From the physical viewpoint, torsion characters  $\chi \in (\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}})^\vee$  have the special property that they allow a consistent truncation of the chiral ring  $\mathcal{R}_\mathcal{A}$  to a finite-dimensional ring  $\mathcal{R}_\chi$  so that the  $\vec{\theta}$ -vacua  $|\vec{\theta}, a\rangle$ ,  $\vec{\theta} \in J_\chi$  become normalizable, while they are never normalizable for  $\chi$  non-torsion. Normalizability of the ground state(s) is a basic principle in quantum mechanics.

### 5.7.4 $tt^*$ equations in $(\mathbb{C} \times S^1)^b$

The periods of  $d\mathcal{W}_x$  define an additive character of  $\pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}} \cong \mathbb{Z}^b$

$$\mathcal{W}_x(T_{\vec{n}} z) = \mathcal{W}_x(z) + \vec{n} \cdot \vec{\omega}(x), \tag{5.95}$$

where  $T_{\vec{n}}$  is the element of the deck group corresponding to  $\vec{n} \in \mathbb{Z}^b$ . We assume all components of  $\omega_i \equiv \vec{\omega}(x)_i$  to be non-zero and  $\mathbb{Q}$ -linearly independent (otherwise we consider a smaller Abelian cover and reduce to this case). We choose the local coordinates in  $\mathcal{X}$  so that the first  $b$  coordinates are the  $\omega_i$ 's, writing  $t_a$  for the remaining ones such that  $\partial_{t_a} \mathcal{W}$  are well-defined holomorphic functions on  $\mathcal{K}$ , representing elements of  $\mathcal{R}_\mathcal{K}$ . We write the character  $\chi$  in the form  $\vec{n} \mapsto e^{i\vec{n} \cdot \vec{\theta}}$ .

---

<sup>71</sup>See e.g. [136] page 124.

We consider the rank- $d$  vector bundle  $\mathcal{V}_{\vec{\theta}} \rightarrow \mathcal{X}$  for a fixed character  $\vec{\theta}$ , endowed with the  $tt^*$  Hermitian metric  $G(\vec{\theta})$ . In the canonical trivialization  $G(\vec{\theta})$  satisfies the reality condition

$$G(-\vec{\theta})^t = G(\vec{\theta})^{-1}. \tag{5.96}$$

As shown in [7], the metric  $G(\vec{\theta})$ , seen as a function of the variables

$$(\omega_i, \theta_i) \in (\mathbb{C} \times S^1)^b \tag{5.97}$$

for fixed  $t_a$ , satisfies the  $3b$ -dimensional analogue of the 3d non-Abelian Bogomolnji monopole equations with gauge group  $U(d)$ . Indeed the ‘‘Higgs field’’ in the  $\omega_i$  direction,  $C_{\omega_i}$ , becomes an  $U(w_k)$  covariant derivative in the  $\theta_i$  direction

$$C_{\omega_i} \rightsquigarrow \bar{D}_{\bar{\vartheta}_i} = \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_i} + M_{\omega_i}, \quad \bar{C}_{\bar{\omega}_i} \rightsquigarrow -D_{\vartheta_i} = \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_i} - G \partial_{\theta_i} G^{-1} - G M_{\omega_i}^\dagger G^{-1}. \tag{5.98}$$

At fixed  $t_a$ , the components of the  $tt^*$  flat connection take the form

$$D_{\omega_i} + \frac{1}{\zeta} \bar{D}_{\bar{\vartheta}_i} \equiv \mathbf{D}_{1,i}^{(\zeta)}, \quad \bar{D}_{\bar{\omega}_i} - \zeta D_{\vartheta_i} \equiv \mathbf{D}_{2,i}^{(\zeta)}. \tag{5.99}$$

Seeing the  $\vartheta_i$ ’s as complex coordinates with real part  $\theta_i$ , and introducing the new complex coordinates  $(\eta_i, \xi_i)$  ( $i = 1, \dots, b$ )

$$\eta_i = \omega_i - \zeta \bar{\vartheta}_i, \quad \xi_i = \bar{\omega}_i + \frac{1}{\zeta} \vartheta_i, \tag{5.100}$$

which defines a  $\mathbb{P}^1$  family of complex structures parametrized by the twistor variable  $\zeta$ , and a flat hyperKähler geometry with holomorphic symplectic structures

$$d\eta_i \wedge d\xi_i = \frac{1}{\zeta} d\omega_i \wedge d\vartheta_i + (d\omega_i \wedge d\bar{\omega}_i + d\vartheta_i \wedge d\bar{\vartheta}_i) + \zeta d\bar{\omega}_i \wedge d\bar{\vartheta}_i. \tag{5.101}$$

One has

$$\mathbf{D}_{\alpha,i}^{(\zeta)} \eta_j = \mathbf{D}_{\alpha,i}^{(\zeta)} \xi_j = 0, \quad \alpha = 1, 2, \tag{5.102}$$

i.e. the first-order differential operators  $\mathbf{D}_{\alpha,i}^{(\zeta)}$  are of pure type  $(0,1)$  in complex structure  $\zeta$  and the  $tt^*$  Lax equations

$$\mathbf{D}_{\alpha,i}^{(\zeta)} \Psi(\zeta) = 0, \quad \alpha = 1, 2, \tag{5.103}$$

just say that the brane amplitudes  $\Psi(\zeta)$  are holomorphic in complex structure  $\zeta$  and independent of  $\text{Im } \vartheta_i$  [7]. The  $tt^*$  equations then say that the curvature of the connection  $\mathbf{D}^{(\zeta)}$  on the flat hyperKähler manifold is of type  $(1,1)$  in all complex structures, i.e.  $\Psi(\zeta)$  is a section of a hyperholomorphic vector bundle [7]. The hyperholomorphic condition, supplemented by the condition on translation invariance in  $\text{Im } \vartheta_i$ , is equivalent to the higher dimensional generalization of the Bogomolnji monopole equations on  $(\mathbb{R}^2 \times S^1)^b$ .

The  $tt^*$  geometry decomposes into an Abelian  $U(1)$  monopole and a non-Abelian  $SU(d)$  monopole. The monopoles are localized at loci in parameter space  $\mathcal{X}$  where the mass gap of the 2d LG model closes. Thus each such locus carries an Abelian and a non-Abelian

magnetic charge. Restricted to the Abelian part, the  $tt^*$  equations become linear; writing  $L(\vec{\theta}) = -\log \det G(\vec{\theta})$ , they read

$$\left( \frac{\partial^2}{\partial \omega_i \partial \bar{\omega}_j} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial \theta_i \partial \bar{\theta}_j} \right) L(\vec{\theta}) = 0 \tag{5.104}$$

$$\frac{\partial^2}{\partial t_a \partial \bar{\omega}_j} L(\vec{\theta}) = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial \bar{t}_a \partial \omega_j} L(\vec{\theta}) = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial t_a \partial \bar{t}_b} L(\vec{\theta}) = 0 \tag{5.105}$$

These equations hold in regions in parameter space where the model has a mass-gap; on the massless locus there are sources in the r.h.s. localized at trivial characters, that is, they are the loci where a non-zero abelian magnetic charge is present. In the  $i$ -th factor 3-space of coordinates  $\omega_i, \theta_i$  (all other fixed) this is a real codimension 3 locus.

We note that the equations (5.104) are identical to the HKLR equations [133] describing a hyperKähler metric  $\mathcal{H}_n$  of quaternionic dimension  $n$  with  $n$  commuting Killing vectors  $K_a$  such that their  $\text{Sp}(1)$  orbits span  $T\mathcal{H}_n$ . For instance, for the model in example 20 the Kähler manifold  $\mathcal{H}_1$  is the Hoguri-Vafa space [134] (a.k.a. periodic Taub-NUT). This is the target space of the GMN 3d  $\sigma$ -model obtained compactifying 4d  $\mathcal{N} = 2$  SQED [135], and the brane amplitudes  $\Psi(\zeta)$  — which are locally holomorphic functions in complex structure  $\zeta$  — coincide with the GMN holomorphic Darboux coordinates [6, 59].

The Abelian part of the Berry connection is

$$A = \partial L(\vec{\theta}) = \partial_{w_i} L(\vec{\theta}) dw_i + \partial_{t_a} L(\vec{\theta}) dt_a. \tag{5.106}$$

The  $tt^*$  relation<sup>72</sup>  $[A_{w_i}, C_{t_a}] = [A_{t_a}, C_{w_i}]$ , together with eq. (5.98), implies

$$\partial_{\theta_i} A_{t_a} = [A_{t_a}, M_{w_i}] - [A_{w_i}, C_{t_a}]. \tag{5.107}$$

Taking the trace gives  $\partial_{\theta_i} A_{t_a} = 0$ ; since  $A_{t_a}$  is odd in  $\vec{\theta}$ , we conclude that the  $t_a$ -components of the  $U(1)$  connection vanish.

### 5.7.5 The covering chiral ring $\mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{A}}$

The chiral ring  $\mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{A}}$  of the (torsion-free<sup>73</sup>) universal Abelian cover SQM has a simple form.<sup>74</sup> For a LG model with target a Stein manifold  $\mathcal{K}$  and a superpotential differential  $d\mathcal{W}$  with finitely many simple zeros, the chiral ring  $\mathcal{R}$  is identified with the space of functions on the critical set  $\{d\mathcal{W} = 0\}$ . This remains true for the LG model uplifted to the torsion-free Abelian cover  $\mathcal{A}$  of  $\mathcal{K}$ . Let us sketch the construction. Since  $\mathcal{K}$  is Stein<sup>75</sup>

$$H^*(\mathcal{K}, \mathbb{C}) \cong H_{\text{DR}}^*(\mathcal{K}) \cong H_{\text{DR}}^*(\mathcal{K}, \text{hol}). \tag{5.108}$$

Then we may find holomorphic one-forms  $\varrho_k \in \Omega^1(\mathcal{K})$  ( $k = 1, \dots, b$ ) whose classes generate  $H^1(\mathcal{K}, \mathbb{Z})/\text{tor}$ . The critical set of  $\mathcal{W}$  in  $\mathcal{A}$  ( $\equiv$  classical vacua in the Abelian cover model) is

$$\text{cri}_{\mathcal{A}} = \left\{ l: [0, 1] \rightarrow \mathcal{K} \mid l(0) = *, l(1) \in \{d\mathcal{W} = 0\} \right\} / \sim \subset \mathcal{A}. \tag{5.109}$$

<sup>72</sup>Here  $A$  is the full Berry  $U(d)$  connection.

<sup>73</sup>By the *torsion-free* Abelian cover we mean eqs. (5.77)(5.78) where we replace  $H_1(\mathcal{K}, \mathbb{Z})$  with  $H_1(\mathcal{K}, \mathbb{R})$  in the definition of the equivalence relation  $\sim$ . The LG models relevant for FQHE have free  $H_1(\mathcal{K}, \mathbb{Z})$ , so the distinction is immaterial.

<sup>74</sup>In the following argument the assumption that  $\mathcal{K}$  is Stein is crucial.

<sup>75</sup>See pages 445, 449, or 451 of [23], or THEOREM G on page 198 of [27].



Adding to  $\varrho_k$  an exact term we may assume with no loss

$$\int_l \varrho_k \in \mathbb{Z} \quad \text{for all } l \in \text{cri}_{\mathcal{A}}. \tag{5.110}$$

On  $\mathcal{A}$  there exist global holomorphic functions  $h_k$  such that  $\varrho_a = dh_k$ .

Now let  $\{\phi_a\} \in \mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{K}}$  be holomorphic functions on  $\mathcal{K}$  which form a basis of the chiral ring for the original model, with  $\phi_0 = 1_{\mathcal{K}}$  and product table  $\phi_a \phi_b = C_{ab}^c \phi_c$ . Clearly the holomorphic functions on  $\mathcal{A}$

$$\Phi_a(\vec{\theta}) \equiv \varpi^* \phi_a \cdot \exp [i \vec{\theta} \cdot \vec{h}], \quad a = 1, \dots, w_{\mathcal{K}}, \quad \vec{\theta} \in [0, 2\pi)^b, \tag{5.111}$$

yield a topological basis of  $\mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{A}}$  diagonal in the characters of  $H_1(\mathcal{K}, \mathbb{Z})/\text{tor}$ . The product table of  $\mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{A}}$  is then

$$\Phi_a(\vec{\theta}) \cdot \Phi_b(\vec{\varphi}) = C_{ab}^c \Phi_c(\vec{\theta} + \vec{\varphi}). \tag{5.112}$$

From this it also follows that the UV Berry connection  $A(\vec{\theta})^{\text{UV}}$  is a piece-wise linear function of  $\vec{\theta}$  [6]. The discontinuous jumps of  $A(\vec{\theta})^{\text{UV}}$  correspond to gauge transformations, and the characters of the monodromy representation are continuous. For generic  $\vec{\theta}$  the eigenvalues of the monodromy matrices are distinct, and hence no Jordan blocks are present; at characters where we have “jumps” typically a non-trivial Jordan blocks appear.

Let  $H \subset \mathbb{Z}^b \cong \pi_1(\mathcal{K})^{\text{Ab}}$  be a subgroup and  $J = \ker H$  the subgroup of characters which are trivial on  $H$ . The chiral ring  $\mathcal{R}_H$  of the model defined on the cover  $\mathcal{A}_H$  (cfr. section 5.7.2) is spanned by the chiral operators

$$\left\{ \Phi_a(\vec{\theta}) \right\}_{\vec{\theta} \in J}. \tag{5.113}$$

**Example 21.** For the model in example 20, one has  $\phi_1 = 1$  and  $h = \log(z/m)$ . Then the vacua has the form  $m^{-\theta/2\pi} |z^{\theta/2\pi}\rangle$ , and the brane amplitudes contain the insertion  $(z/m)^{\theta/2\pi}$  as expected.

### 5.7.6 A fancier language

For the sake of comparison with the literature on representation of braid groups and the Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov equation [11, 55] we state the above result in a different way. We write  $q_i = e^{i\theta_i}$  for  $i = 1, \dots, b$ . Clearly  $\mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{A}}$  is a module over the ring  $\mathbb{C}[\{q_i^{\pm 1}\}]$  of Laurent polynomials in  $q_1, \dots, q_b$ . The isomorphism<sup>76</sup>

$$\mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{A}} \cong \mathcal{B}(\zeta)_{\mathcal{A}} \equiv H_*(\mathcal{A}, \mathcal{A}_{x,\zeta}, \mathbb{Z}) \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{C} \tag{5.114}$$

allows us to restrict the scalars to  $\mathbb{Z}$ . Thus

**Fact 4.**  $\mathcal{B}(\zeta)_{\mathcal{A}} \cong \mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{A}} \cong \mathcal{V}_{\mathcal{A}}$  is a free  $\mathbb{Z}[\{q_i^{\pm 1}\}]$ -module of rank  $d$ . Then the  $tt^*$  Lax connection defines a group homomorphism

$$\varrho: \pi_1(\mathcal{X}) \rightarrow \text{Aut}_{\mathbb{Z}[\{q_i^{\pm 1}\}]}(\mathcal{B}_{\mathcal{A}}) \tag{5.115}$$

---

<sup>76</sup>Recall that  $\mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{A}}^{\vee} \cong \mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{A}}$  since  $\mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{A}}$  is a Frobenius algebra.

where

$$\text{Aut}_{\mathbb{Z}[\{q_i^{\pm 1}\}]}(\mathcal{B}_A) \subset GL(d, \mathbb{Z}[\{q_i^{\pm 1}\}]) \tag{5.116}$$

stands for the group of  $\mathbb{Z}[\{q_i^{\pm 1}\}]$ -linear automorphisms which preserve the bilinear intersection form between dual branes

$$\mathcal{B}(\zeta)_A \otimes \mathcal{B}(-\zeta)_A \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}[\{q_i^{\pm 1}\}] \tag{5.117}$$

(cfr. eq. (3.26)).

## 6 $tt^*$ geometry of the Vafa 4-SUSY SQM

Now we have all the tools to analyze the Vafa model of FQHE.

### 6.1 Generalities

For simplicity, we take the  $N$  electrons to move in the plane  $\mathbb{C}$  instead of the more rigorous treatment in which they move in a periodic box (i.e. a large 2-torus  $E$ ). We write  $z_i$ ,  $x_a$  ( $a = 1, \dots, n$ ), and  $y_\alpha$  ( $\alpha = 1, \dots, M$ ) for, respectively, the positions of the electrons, of the quasi-holes, and the support of the polar divisor  $D_\infty \sim D$  which models the magnetic flux (cfr. section 2.2). The points  $d \equiv n + M$  points  $\{x_a, y_\alpha\} \subset \mathbb{C}$  are all distinct.

The Vafa model is the LG SQM with target space

$$\mathcal{K}_{d,N} = \left\{ (z_1, \dots, z_N) \in (\mathbb{C} \setminus \{x_1, \dots, x_n, y_1, \dots, y_M\})^N \mid z_i \neq z_j \text{ for } i \neq j \right\} / \mathfrak{S}_N. \tag{6.1}$$

In the experimental set-up  $N$  is very large, while  $N/d = \nu$  and  $n$  are fixed. Despite this, we shall keep  $N$  arbitrary as our arguments apply both for  $N$  small and large.

We have already noted in section 5.5 that  $\mathcal{K}_{d,N}$  is an affine variety

$$\mathcal{K}_{d,N} = \mathbb{C}^N \setminus S, \quad S = \{ \text{discr}(P) \text{Res}(A, P) = 0 \}, \quad A(z) = \prod_a (z - x_a) \prod_\alpha (z - \zeta_\alpha). \tag{6.2}$$

It is convenient to write  $\mathcal{K}_{d,N} = \mathbb{P}^N \setminus T$ , where  $T$  is the obvious divisor. By Hironaka theorem we may blow-up the geometry so that

$$\mathcal{K}_{n,N} = \widehat{\mathbb{P}^N} \setminus S_{\text{SNC}}, \tag{6.3}$$

with  $S_{\text{SNC}}$  a normal crossing divisor (see [55] for details).

The superpotential is

$$\mathcal{W} = \beta \sum_{i < j} \log(z_i - z_j)^2 + \sum_i \left( \mu z_i + \sum_{a=1}^n \log(z_i - x_a) - \sum_{\alpha=1}^M \log(z_i - \zeta_\alpha) \right), \tag{6.4}$$

rewritten in terms of the elementary symmetric functions  $e_k$

$$\mathcal{W} = \beta \log \text{discr}(P) + \mu e_1 + \sum_{a=1}^n \log P(x_a) - \sum_{\alpha=1}^M \log P(\zeta_\alpha), \tag{6.5}$$

where

$$P(z) = \sum_{k=0}^N (-1)^k e_k z^{N-k}. \tag{6.6}$$

We have introduced the coupling  $\mu$  to make the problem better behaved. Note that, as long as  $\mu$  is not zero, it can be set to 1 by a field redefinition.

The superpotential  $\mathcal{W}$  is not univalued in  $\mathcal{K}$ . As discussed in section 5.7, we have two kinds of couplings: the  $\omega$ -type given by the residues of  $d\mathcal{W}$  at its poles, and the  $t$ -type given by the positions  $x_a, \zeta_\alpha$ . The residues of the poles of  $d\mathcal{W}$  at  $x_a$  and  $\zeta_\alpha$  are frozen to the values  $\pm 1$  by the argument in section 2.2.4, and the corresponding couplings will play no role in the following discussion. The only relevant  $\omega$ -type coupling is  $\beta$ . Working in a periodic box,  $\beta$  is frozen to the rational number  $1/(2\nu)$  (cfr. section 2.2.7); on the contrary, when the electrons move on  $\mathbb{C}$ , the SQM model makes sense for an arbitrary complex  $\beta$ . The monodromy representation is independent of  $\beta$ , and we are free to deform it away from its physical value  $1/(2\nu)$  to simplify the analysis.

The non-frozen couplings are the  $x_a$  and the  $\zeta_\alpha$  which form a set of  $d$  distinct points in  $\mathbb{C}$  identified modulo permutation of equal “charge” ones. The manifold of essential couplings is then

$$\mathcal{X} = \mathcal{C}_{n+M} / \mathfrak{S}_n \times \mathfrak{S}_M \xrightarrow{\text{proj}} \mathcal{Y}_n, \tag{6.7}$$

where  $\mathcal{Y}_n$  is the space defined in (4.8). The  $\zeta_\alpha$ 's are homogeneously distributed on  $\mathbb{C}$ , and their detailed distribution is not very important for our present purposes, so we mainly focus on the projection on  $\mathcal{Y}_n$ .

One has

$$1 \rightarrow \mathcal{P}_{n+M} \rightarrow \pi_1(\mathcal{X}) \rightarrow \mathfrak{S}_n \times \mathfrak{S}_M \rightarrow 1. \tag{6.8}$$

$\pi_1(\mathcal{X})$  contains  $\mathcal{B}_n$  as a subgroup. The UV Berry connection yields a family of unitary arithmetic representations of  $\pi_1(\mathcal{X})$ ; restricting to  $\mathcal{B}_n$  we get a monodromy representation

$$\varrho_\downarrow(\vec{\theta}): \mathcal{B}_n \rightarrow \text{GL}(\mathcal{V}_{\vec{\theta}}) \tag{6.9}$$

parametrized by the characters  $\vec{\theta}$  of  $\text{Gal}(\mathcal{A}/\mathcal{K})$ .

Before the fermionic truncation the number of vacua with fixed  $\vec{\theta}$  is

$$d_{d,N} = \binom{N+d-1}{N} \tag{6.10}$$

which reduce to just  $\binom{d}{N}$  after the truncation.

## 6.2 Topology of the field space $\mathcal{K}_{d,N}$

One has

$$\pi_1(\mathcal{K}_{d,N}) = \mathcal{B}(N, S_{0,d+1}) \tag{6.11}$$

where  $\mathcal{B}(n, S_{g,p})$  stands for the braid group in  $n$  strings on the surface  $S_{g,p}$  of genus  $g$  with  $p$  punctures.<sup>77</sup>  $\mathcal{B}(n, S_{0,p})$  has the following convenient presentation ([137] thm. 5.1):

$$\text{generators: } \sigma_1, \sigma_2, \dots, \sigma_{n-1}, z_1, z_2, \dots, z_{p-1} \tag{6.12}$$

$$\text{relations: } \begin{cases} \sigma_i \sigma_{i+1} \sigma_i = \sigma_{i+1} \sigma_i \sigma_{i+1}, & \sigma_i \sigma_j = \sigma_j \sigma_i \text{ for } |i-j| \geq 2, \\ z_j \sigma_i = \sigma_i z_j \text{ for } i \neq 1 & \sigma_1^{-1} z_j \sigma_1^{-1} z_j = z_j \sigma_1^{-1} z_j \sigma_1^{-1} \\ \sigma_1^{-1} z_j \sigma_1 z_l = z_l \sigma_1^{-1} z_j \sigma_1 \text{ for } j < l. \end{cases} \tag{6.13}$$

The  $\sigma_i$  generate a subgroup of  $\mathcal{B}(n, S_{0,p})$  isomorphic to the Artin braid group  $\mathcal{B}_n$ . Then

$$\mathcal{B}(n, S_{0,p})^{\text{Ab}} = \text{the free Abelian group in the generators } \sigma, z_1, \dots, z_{p-1} \cong \mathbb{Z}^p, \tag{6.14}$$

which corresponds to  $H^1(\mathcal{K}, \mathbb{Z}) \cong \mathbb{Z}^p$  with generators (cfr. eq. (6.2))

$$\frac{1}{2\pi i} d \log \text{discr}(P), \quad \frac{1}{2\pi i} d \log P(x_a), \quad \frac{1}{2\pi i} d \log P(\zeta_\alpha). \tag{6.15}$$

*A priori*, there is one angle associated to each of these generators; let us call them

$$\theta, \quad \phi_a, \quad \varphi_\alpha, \tag{6.16}$$

respectively. If (as physically natural) we consider the quasi-holes and the magnetic-flux units to be indistinguishable we shall take the corresponding angles to be all equal  $\phi_a \equiv \phi$  and  $\varphi_\alpha \equiv \varphi$ . In the formalism developed in section 5.7.2, this corresponds to taking the quotient group  $\mathbb{Z} \oplus \mathbb{Z} \oplus \mathbb{Z}$  of  $H_1(\mathcal{K}_{d,N}, \mathbb{Z})$  dual to the subgroup of  $H^1(\mathcal{K}_{d,N}, \mathbb{Z})$  generated by the three differentials

$$\frac{1}{2\pi i} d \log \text{discr}(P), \quad \frac{1}{2\pi i} d \log \prod_{a=1}^n P(x_a), \quad \frac{1}{2\pi i} d \log \prod_{\alpha=1}^M P(\zeta_\alpha), \tag{6.17}$$

and considering the LG model on the Abelian cover  $\mathcal{A}_H$  where

$$H \equiv \ker H_1(\mathcal{K}_{d,N}, \mathbb{Z}) \rightarrow \mathbb{Z} \oplus \mathbb{Z} \oplus \mathbb{Z}. \tag{6.18}$$

In particular  $\pi_1(\mathcal{A}_H) \cong \mathbb{Z}^3$ . Therefore, *a priori*, we have three angles  $\theta$ ,  $\phi$  and  $\varphi$ . Setting  $q = e^{i\theta}$ ,  $t = e^{i\phi}$ , and  $y = e^{i\varphi}$  we conclude:

**Fact 5.** *In the LG model with indistinguishable defects, the BPS branes span a free  $\mathbb{Z}[q^{\pm 1}, t^{\pm 1}, y^{\pm 1}]$ -module of rank  $d_{d,N}$ . Normalizability of the ground states requires specialization to  $q$ ,  $t$  and  $y$  roots of unit.*

However the physical FQHE is a much simpler quantum system, and further truncations are present. We shall dwell on this issue in section 6.4. Before going to that, we present a different application of the  $tt^*$  geometry of a special case of the LG model (6.4).

---

<sup>77</sup>In this notation the standard (Artin) braid group is  $\mathcal{B}_n = \mathcal{B}(n, S_{0,1})$ .

### 6.3 Homological braid representations as $tt^*$ geometries

The theory of general homological braid representations [11, 47, 55, 91, 92] is just a special topic in  $tt^*$  geometry. For the sake of comparison with the geometry of the Vafa model, we briefly review that story following [55, 91, 92] but using  $tt^*$  language.

There is a sequence of such monodromy representations  $\text{Mon}_N$  for the braid group  $\mathcal{B}_n$  labelled by an integer  $N \in \mathbb{N}$  [47]; for  $N = 1$  we get the Burau representation [10, 53], and for  $N = 2$  the Lawrence-Krammer-Bigelow one [11, 91, 92].

$\text{Mon}_N(\mathcal{B}_n)$  is just the  $tt^*$  (Lax) monodromy representation for the superpotential (6.5) for  $N$  electrons and  $n$  quasi-holes with  $\mu = 0$  (which makes things a lot less nice),  $M = 0$  and  $\beta$  a real positive number, say 1. The quasi-hole are indistinguishable. Since  $M = 0$ , there are no angles  $\varphi_\alpha$  and eq. (6.18) reduces to

$$H \equiv \ker H_1(\mathcal{K}_{n,N}, \mathbb{Z}) \rightarrow \mathbb{Z} \oplus \mathbb{Z}. \tag{6.19}$$

One defines the LG model on the Abelian cover  $\mathcal{A}_H$ , so that the BPS-branes at given  $\zeta$

$$\mathcal{B}_\zeta \equiv H_*(\mathcal{A}_H, \mathcal{A}_{H,\zeta}, \mathbb{Z}) \equiv H_N(\mathcal{A}_H, \mathcal{A}_{H,\zeta}, \mathbb{Z}) \tag{6.20}$$

form a  $\mathbb{Z}[q^{\pm 1}, t^{\pm 1}]$ -module of rank  $d_{n-1,N}$ .<sup>78</sup> The monodromy acting on the branes yields a braid group representation

$$\mathcal{B}_n \rightarrow GL(d_{n-1,N}, \mathbb{Z}[q^{\pm 1}, t^{\pm 1}]). \tag{6.21}$$

Mathematicians focus on the two dual modules of branes at  $\zeta = +1$  and  $\zeta = -1$ . The main character in the theory is the non-degenerate pairing

$$\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle: \mathcal{B}_+ \times \mathcal{B}_- \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}[q^{\pm 1}, t^{\pm 1}] \tag{6.22}$$

corresponding to the TFT metric  $\eta$  (cfr. eq. (3.26)) given by the standard  $tt^*$  formula already written in the original paper [3]. In the present context, and for the special case  $N = 2$ , it is called the Blanchfield pairing [91, 138, 139] (for details, see e.g. section 3.3.5 of the book [11]).

For *generic*  $q$  and  $t$ , the monodromy representation (6.21) is equivalent to a sub-representation of a  $\mathfrak{sl}_2$  Kniznick-Zamolodchikov representation on the sub-bundle of the eigenbundle of the total angular momentum  $L_3$  corresponding to the  $N$  electron sector (cfr. section 5.4) of higher weight states, see [55] for details.

### 6.4 The FQHE quantum system

#### 6.4.1 Characters of $\text{Gal}(\mathcal{A}/\mathcal{K})$

The FQHE quantum system is a particular version of the 4-SUSY LG model with superpotential  $\mathcal{W}$  in (6.5). Quasi-holes and magnetic-flux units are indistinguishable, but we have still to fix the characters  $\theta$ ,  $\phi$ , and  $\varphi$ .

The sole purpose of the poles in  $d\mathcal{W}$  at the points  $\zeta_\alpha$  is to mimic the external magnetic field  $B$  *via* the isomorphism in section 2.2. The discussion in that section was done entirely

---

<sup>78</sup>The shift  $n \rightarrow n - 1$  is due to  $\mu = 0$ .

in  $\mathcal{K}$ , without any mention of a non-trivial Abelian cover  $\mathcal{A}_H$ , and hence referred to the trivial character  $\varphi = 0 \bmod 2\pi$ . Therefore we set to zero the angles associated to the generators of  $H^1(\mathcal{K}, \mathbb{Z})$  of the form  $d \log P(\zeta_\alpha)/2\pi i$ . This may look as a simplification, but it has a technical drawback. With this choice of character the *genericity* condition in (say) ref. [55] fails, and several standard results do not longer apply.

The quasi-holes may be thought of as “wrong-sign” elementary magnetic fluxes, so it looks natural to expect that the characters associated to the generators  $d \log P(x_\alpha)/2\pi i$  should also be trivial,  $\phi = 0 \bmod 2\pi$ . Clearly, one may extend the analysis to  $\phi \neq 0$ . The previous *caveat* apply to this character as well.

We remain with just one non-trivial angle  $\theta$  associated to the Vandermonde coupling  $\beta$ . From the considerations in section 5.7.3 we expect  $\theta$  to be rational multiple of  $2\pi$

$$\theta = \pi \left(1 + \frac{a}{b}\right), \quad a \in \mathbb{Z}, b \in \mathbb{N}, \quad \gcd(a, b) = 1, \quad -b \leq a \leq b. \quad (6.23)$$

The  $tt^*$  reality structure relates  $-a$  to  $a$ , so if a pair  $(a, b)$  corresponds to a quantum phase of FQHE it is natural to expect that a “dual” phase associated to  $(-a, b)$  exists as well. We shall write  $(\pm a, b)$  with  $1 \leq a \leq b$  to cover both phases at once.

The Abelian cover  $\mathcal{A}_\theta$  associated to the character (6.23) is (cfr. eq. (5.94))

$$\mathcal{A}_\theta = \left\{ l: [0, 1] \rightarrow \mathcal{K}, \quad l(0) = * \right\} / \sim_b, \quad (6.24)$$

where  $\sim_b$  is the equivalence

$$l \sim_b l' \iff l(1) = l'(1) \text{ and } \int_l d \log \text{discr}(P) - \int_{l'} d \log \text{discr}(P) \in 4\pi i b \mathbb{Z}. \quad (6.25)$$

#### 6.4.2 Fermionic truncation vs. $\theta$ -limit

The model (6.5) is of the Heine-Stieltjes class. As discussed in section 5.6, to get the correct physical counting of states we need to consider its fermionic truncation, i.e. to keep only the states which do not escape to the excised divisor  $S$  as  $\beta \rightarrow 0$ . Since the monodromy is independent of  $\beta$  (as long as it is not zero), and its limit as  $\beta \rightarrow 0$  is smooth after the fermionic truncation, we may as well set  $\beta = 0$  while keeping track of the non-trivial topology of  $\mathcal{K}$  through its associated character  $\theta$ . In the language of [6] this is the “ $\theta$ -limit”. Roughly speaking, in the  $\theta$ -limit the only effect of  $\theta \neq 0$  is to make a “non-commutative deformation” of the geometry with deformation parameter

$$q \equiv e^{i\eta} \rightsquigarrow e^{i\theta}. \quad (6.26)$$

The monodromy matrices then are valued in  $\mathbb{Z}[q^{\pm 1}]$ , in agreement with section 5.7.6 (see also the discussion in ref. [48]).

From eq. (5.111) we see that switching on a non-zero  $\theta$  means

$$|\phi_a\rangle \rightarrow |e^{i\theta h} \phi_a\rangle = e^{i\theta h} |\phi_a\rangle + \overline{Q}(\text{something}), \quad (6.27)$$

that is, it corresponds to inserting in the BPS brane amplitudes the chiral field  $e^{i\theta h}$ . For the model (6.5),  $e^{i\theta h}$  is proportional to

$$\text{discr}(P)^{\theta/2\pi} = \prod_{i < j} (z_i - z_j)^{\theta/\pi}. \quad (6.28)$$

Keeping into account the Jacobian of  $\{z_i\} \mapsto \{e_k\}$ , section 5.2.2, the vacuum wave-functions in terms of the  $z_i$ 's contain the factor

$$\prod_{i < j} (z_i - z_j)^{1+\theta/\pi}, \quad 0 \leq \theta \leq 2\pi. \tag{6.29}$$

Comparing with the Laughlin wave-functions [24] we are led to the identification

$$\frac{1}{\nu} = 1 + \frac{\theta}{\pi} = 2 \pm \frac{a}{b} \tag{6.30}$$

which gives  $1 \leq 1/\nu \leq 3$ . In particular, the minimal  $b$ -torsion character,  $a = 1$ , yields the FQHE principal series [1]

$$\nu = \frac{b}{2b \pm 1}, \quad b \in \mathbb{N}. \tag{6.31}$$

Although this series are the most natural LG quantum systems of the form (6.5), it is by no means the only possibility in the present framework.

### 6.5 The $tt^*$ geometry of the Vafa model is very complete

We are reduced to the fermionic truncation of the model (6.4) which allows us to effectively put the coupling  $\beta$  to zero. Then, provided we may show that the  $tt^*$  geometry of the one-field model

$$W(z) = \mu z + \sum_{a=1}^n \log(z - x_a) - \sum_{\alpha=1}^M \log(z - \zeta_\alpha) \tag{6.32}$$

is very complete, we may apply the arguments of section 5.4 and conclude that the monodromy representation factors through a Hecke algebra (in facts through the Temperley-Lieb algebra).

Again we follow [48]. The monodromy representation is independent of  $\mu$ , and we choose it to be very large  $\mu \gg 1$ . The SUSY vacuum equations (the Bethe ansatz equations in the language of [48])

$$\mu = \sum_{\alpha} \frac{1}{z - \zeta_\alpha} - \sum_a \frac{1}{z - x_a}, \tag{6.33}$$

have  $n + M$  solutions of the form  $z = x_a + O(1/\mu)$  or  $z = \zeta_\alpha + O(1/\mu)$  and the critical values, rescaled by a factor  $\mu^{-1}$ , are

$$\{w_1, \dots, w_{n+M}\} = \{x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n, \zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_M\} + O\left(\frac{1}{\mu} \log \mu\right). \tag{6.34}$$

So that the cover  $\mathcal{C}_{n+M}$  of the coupling space  $\mathcal{X}$  (cfr. eq. (6.7)) is naturally identified with the cover  $\mathcal{C}_{n+M}$  of the critical value space. Since to get  $\mathcal{X}$  we quotient out only the subgroup  $\mathfrak{S}_n \times \mathfrak{S}_M \subset \mathfrak{S}_{n+M}$ , we need to work on a cover of the actual critical value space  $\mathcal{Y}_{n+M} \equiv \mathcal{C}_{n+M}/\mathfrak{S}_{n+M}$ , but this is immaterial for the monodromy representation of the subgroup  $\mathcal{B}_n$ .

The commutative diagram (4.12) takes the form

$$\begin{array}{ccc} & & p \\ & \curvearrowright & \\ \mathcal{C}_{n+M} & \longrightarrow & \mathcal{X} \simeq \mathcal{C}_{n+M}/(\mathfrak{S}_n \times \mathfrak{S}_M) \xrightarrow{w} \mathcal{Y}_{n+M} \equiv \mathcal{C}_{n+M}/\mathfrak{S}_{n+M} \\ & & \end{array} \tag{6.35}$$

where all maps are canonical projections. This shows that the one-field theory (hence the tensor product of  $N$  decoupled copies of it) has a very complete  $tt^*$  geometry.

The ideas of section 4 lead to the conclusion that the UV Berry monodromy representation of  $\pi_1(\mathcal{Y}_n) \equiv \mathcal{B}_n$  is given by the holonomy in  $\mathcal{Y}_n$  of a flat  $\mathfrak{sl}(2)$  Kohno connection

$$\mathcal{D} = d + \lambda(\theta) \sum_{i < j} s_\ell^{(i)} s_\ell^{(j)} \frac{d(w_i - w_j)}{w_i - w_j} \tag{6.36}$$

acting on the space  $\mathbf{V}^{n+M}$ , restricted to the subspace of total angular momentum

$$L_3 = N - (n + M)/2. \tag{6.37}$$

In eq. (6.36),  $\lambda(\theta)$  is some piece-wise linear function of  $\theta$ . In the context of actual FQHE the character  $\theta$  is expected to be related to the filling fraction  $\nu$  as in eq. (6.30). In particular, the monodromy representation factors through a Temperley-Lieb algebra.

It remains to compute the function  $\lambda(\theta)$ .

**Remark.** One expects a simple relation between the monodromy of the Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov connection (6.36) and the homological one associated to the asymmetric limit. It is known that for generic angles  $\theta$ ,  $\phi$  and  $\varphi$  the monodromies associated to the  $\mathfrak{sl}(2)$  Gaudin model with an irregular singularity at  $\infty$  (i.e. with  $\mu \neq 0$ ) yield all monodromy representations of the  $\mathfrak{sl}(2)$  eigenvectors [48, 129]. However here we have three major sources of difference with the situation studied in the math literature:

- A. the fermionic truncation: we consider a sub-module of  $\mathcal{B}_\pm$  of “small” rank;
- B. the angles are very non-generic. The math arguments do not apply;
- C. the representation is twisted by the one-dimensional one given by the overall normalization factor  $1/\tau(w_j)^N$  that has an important effect as example 11 shows.

### 6.6 Determing $\lambda(\theta)$

Computing  $\lambda(\theta)$  directly is hard and subtle.<sup>79</sup> Therefore we shall take a different approach, namely try to fix it using the properties that it should have and consistency conditions. We fix the (discontinuous) function  $\lambda(\theta) \bmod 1$ . In order not to get confused by tricky issues of signs and bundle trivializations, we focus on the intrinsically defined quantity,  $q(\theta)^2$ , namely the ratio of the two distinct eigenvalues of  $\sigma_i^2 \in \mathcal{P}_{n+M}$ , i.e. of the operation of transporting one quasi-hole around another and getting back to the original position after a  $2\pi$  rotation of their relative separation  $w_i - w_j$ . For the connection (6.36) one has

$$q(\theta)^2 = \exp(2\pi i \lambda(\theta)). \tag{6.38}$$

Since the  $tt^*$  geometry is very complete and symmetric between the quasi-holes, we conclude that  $\lambda(\theta)$  is a universal function which does not depend on  $n$ ,  $M$ . Moreover we know that it must be piece-wise linear, i.e.

$$\lambda(\theta) = C_1 + C_2 \frac{\theta}{\pi} \bmod 1, \tag{6.39}$$

---

<sup>79</sup>See APPENDIX A of [6] for an example of how tricky the computation may be even in simple examples.



for some real constants  $C_1, C_2$ . We may assume  $C_2 > 0$  by flipping the sign of  $\theta$  if necessary. Requiring  $q(\theta)^2$  to satisfy the periodicity and “reality” conditions

$$q(\theta + 2\pi)^2 = q(\theta)^2 \quad q(-\theta)^2 = q(\theta)^{-2}, \tag{6.40}$$

we get  $2C_1 = 0 \pmod 1$  and  $2C_2 = 0 \pmod 1$ . Imposing the same conditions on the ratio  $q(\theta)$  of the eigenvalues of the braid generator  $\sigma_i$  would give the stronger conditions  $C_1 = 0 \pmod 1$  and  $C_2 = 0 \pmod 1$ . The simplest solution to these conditions is

$$\lambda(\theta) = \frac{\theta}{\pi} \pmod 1. \tag{6.41}$$

This identification is natural also from another point of view: we have that the monodromy is defined over  $\mathbb{Z}[e^{\pm i\theta}]$ , while from the KZ connection it is defined over  $\mathbb{Z}[e^{\pm i\pi\lambda(\theta)}]$ . Eq. (6.41) just identifies these two Laurent polynomial rings.

Comparing with eq. (6.30) we get

$$q(\theta)^2 = \exp(2\pi i\lambda(\theta)) = \exp(2\pi i/\nu). \tag{6.42}$$

## 6.7 Comparison with Vafa’s predictions

### 6.7.1 Allowed fractional filling levels $\nu$

First of all, let us see from the present viewpoint what singles out the principal series (6.31) as “preferred” filling levels. Suppose the connection (6.36) is an actually Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov connection for  $SU(2)$  current algebra, with the level  $\kappa$  properly quantized in integral units [9, 89]. One has the identification<sup>80</sup>

$$q(\theta) = -e^{\pm 2\pi i/(\kappa+2)}, \quad \kappa \in \mathbb{Z}. \tag{6.43}$$

Taking the square root of the two sides of (6.42) one has

$$q(\theta) = e^{\pi i\lambda(\theta)} \tag{6.44}$$

and eq. (6.43) becomes

$$\pm \frac{2}{\kappa + 2} = 1 + \frac{\theta}{\pi} \pmod 2 = \pm \frac{a}{b} \pmod 2 \tag{6.45}$$

which has solutions  $a = 1$  with  $\kappa$  even and  $a = 2$  with  $b$  and  $\kappa$  odd. The first case corresponds to the principal series with odd denominators

$$\nu = \frac{b}{2b \pm 1} \quad b \in \mathbb{N}. \tag{6.46}$$

Since  $\kappa$  is even, it is natural to think of the principal series as related to  $SO(3)$  Chern-Simons rather than  $SU(2)$  Chern-Simons. This is the more natural solution. But there are others.

---

<sup>80</sup>The minus sign in this formula arise from the minus sign in the r.h.s. of eq. (4.118).

The second case yields filling fractions with denominators divisible by 4

$$\nu = \frac{b}{2(b \pm 1)}, \quad b \text{ odd.} \tag{6.47}$$

On the other hand, we may consider the opposite (and less natural) solution to eq. (6.42)

$$q(\theta) = -e^{\pi i \lambda(\theta)} \tag{6.48}$$

which implies

$$1 + \frac{2}{\kappa + 2} = 1 + \frac{\theta}{\pi} \text{ mod } 2 = \frac{1}{\nu} \text{ mod } 2 \tag{6.49}$$

that is,

$$\nu = \frac{m}{m + 2} \quad m = \kappa + 2 \in \mathbb{N}_{\geq 2}. \tag{6.50}$$

a series of filling fractions present in [1] which contains the values of  $\nu$  corresponding to the Moore-Read [140] and the Read-Rezayi models [141]. There is yet another possibility, namely we may replace (6.49) by

$$3 - \frac{2}{\kappa + 2} = \frac{1}{\nu} \text{ mod } 2, \tag{6.51}$$

which yields the solutions ( $m = \kappa + 2$ )

$$\nu = \frac{m}{3m - 2}, \quad m \geq 2. \tag{6.52}$$

**Remark.** Even if we do not know any compelling argument from the  $tt^*$  side to require  $\kappa + 2 \in \mathbb{Z}$ , this condition is certainly part of the definition of “good” Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov  $\mathfrak{su}(2)$  connections, and we are pretty willing to believe that it is a necessary condition for consistency. Thus we conjecture that the above list of filling fractions is complete as long as  $\nu \leq 1$ .

### 6.7.2 Non-abelian statistics (principal series)

From the point of view of section 2 of [1] the element  $\sigma_i^2$  of the pure braid group for the principal series has two distinct eigenvalues, in correspondence with the two different fusion channels of the  $\phi_{1,2}$  operator in the minimal  $(2n, 2n \pm 1)$  Virasoro model. The ratio of the two eigenvalues is

$$q^2 = \frac{\exp[2\pi i(h_{1,3} - 2h_{1,2})]}{\exp[2\pi i(h_{1,1} - 2h_{1,2})]} = \exp(2\pi i h_{1,3}) = \exp(2\pi i/\nu), \tag{6.53}$$

which coincides with our equation (6.42) deduced from the  $tt^*$  geometry. Thus we reproduce Vafa’s result.<sup>81</sup>

---

<sup>81</sup>Up to the interchange  $\phi_{1,3} \leftrightarrow \phi_{3,1}$  in the last equation on page 6 of [1].

## 6.8 The emergent unique ground state

As discussed at the end of section 5.4, we have a unique preferred vacuum invariant under parallel transport by the UV Berry connection. We wish to identify it with the unique physical vacuum  $|\text{vac}\rangle$  of the FQHE quantum system when all details of the Hamiltonian  $H$  are taken into account, including the non-universal interaction  $H_{\text{int}}$  (that is, the true vacuum is a topological trivial deformation of  $|\Omega\rangle$ ).

From the viewpoint of the spin-chain with state space the  $2^{M'}$ -dimensional vector space  $\mathbf{V}^{\otimes M'}$  ( $M' \equiv M + n$ ), the preferred vacuum is the state  $|\Psi\rangle$  such that

$$|\Psi\rangle \in \mathbf{V}^{\otimes M'}, \quad L_3|\Psi\rangle = \frac{2N-M'}{2}|\Psi\rangle \tag{6.54}$$

which maximizes

$$\frac{\|L^2|\Psi\rangle\|}{\| |\Psi\rangle \|}. \tag{6.55}$$

Between the states satisfying (6.54),  $|\Omega\rangle$  is the most symmetric under permutations of the spin degrees of freedom. The most symmetric linear combinations of the idempotents  $e_i$  is their sum  $1 = e_1 + \dots + e_w$ . However, we have twists by signs, so we can conclude only that the preferred vacuum corresponds to an element  $\rho$  of the chiral ring of the form  $\pm e_1 \pm e_2 \pm \dots \pm e_w$  for some choice of sign. One has  $\rho^2 = 1$ , and if an usual LG model with intere superpotential this means  $\rho = 1$ . That this applies to the present case is less obvious.

Anyhow  $|\Omega\rangle = |\rho\rangle$  is the most symmetric vacuum. As long as the interaction  $H_{\text{int}}$  preserves the symmetry between the holes and the units of fluxes, it lifts the degeneracy keeping the most symmetric state as the ground state. So it is natural to think of  $|\Omega\rangle$  as the true ground state of the FQHE system.

## 7 Conclusions

In this paper we studied the supersymmetric quantum many-body system proposed by Vafa as a microscopic description of the Fractional Quantum Hall Effect from the perspective of  $tt^*$  geometry.

Albeit our arguments are not fully mathematically rigorous (and improvements are welcomed) our “exact” methods lead to an elegant and coherent picture which agrees with physical consideration from several alternative viewpoints. In particular they agree and strengthen the results of [1]; it also make stronger the case for the 4-supercharge Vafa Hamiltonian to represent the correct universality class of the fundamental many-electron theory. Indeed we argued that any Hamiltonian describing the motion in a plane of many electrons coupled to a strong magnetic field are described (at the level of topological order) by Vafa’s 4-SUSY *independently of the details of the interactions between the electrons*. It is remarkable that one can show that the electron filling fractions  $\nu$  of any such quantum system should be a rational number belonging to one of the series in section 6.7.1. Of course, this is a manifestation of the universal nature of the topological quantum phases.

It is well-known that 3d Chern-Simons is a good effective description of the FQHE. From our present perspective this is quite obvious: the geometric structures we found

(Kohno connections, Hecke algebras and all that) are the essence of Chern-Simons theory. The nice aspect is that we started from the “obviously correct” quantum description of the FQHE systems in terms of the many-body Schrodinger equation describing  $N$  electrons coupled to a strong magnetic field and interacting between them in some “generic” way, and ended up with the Chern-Simons-like structure as an “exact” IR description.

## Acknowledgments

We thank Cumrun Vafa for many stimulating discussions about his model of FQHE.

**Open Access.** This article is distributed under the terms of the Creative Commons Attribution License ([CC-BY 4.0](https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by/4.0/)), which permits any use, distribution and reproduction in any medium, provided the original author(s) and source are credited.

## References

- [1] C. Vafa, *Fractional quantum Hall effect and M-theory*, [arXiv:1511.03372](https://arxiv.org/abs/1511.03372) [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [2] X.G. Wen, *Quantum field theory of many body systems*, Oxford University Press, Oxford U.K. (2004).
- [3] S. Cecotti and C. Vafa, *Topological antitopological fusion*, *Nucl. Phys. B* **367** (1991) 359 [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [4] S. Cecotti and C. Vafa, *Ising model and  $N = 2$  supersymmetric theories*, *Commun. Math. Phys.* **157** (1993) 139 [[hep-th/9209085](#)] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [5] S. Cecotti and C. Vafa, *On classification of  $N = 2$  supersymmetric theories*, *Commun. Math. Phys.* **158** (1993) 569 [[hep-th/9211097](#)] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [6] S. Cecotti, A. Neitzke and C. Vafa, *Twistorial topological strings and a  $tt^*$  geometry for  $\mathcal{N} = 2$  theories in 4d*, *Adv. Theor. Math. Phys.* **20** (2016) 193 [[arXiv:1412.4793](https://arxiv.org/abs/1412.4793)] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [7] S. Cecotti, D. Gaiotto and C. Vafa,  *$tt^*$  geometry in 3 and 4 dimensions*, *JHEP* **05** (2014) 055 [[arXiv:1312.1008](https://arxiv.org/abs/1312.1008)] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [8] B. Dubrovin, *Geometry of 2D topological field theories*, *Lect. Notes Math.* **1620** (1996) 120 [[hep-th/9407018](#)] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [9] V.G. Knizhnik and A.B. Zamolodchikov, *Current algebra and Wess-Zumino models in two dimensions*, *Nucl. Phys. B* **247** (1984) 83.
- [10] W. Burau, *Über Zopfgruppen und gleichsinnig verdrickte Verkettungen*, *Abh. Math. Univ. Hamburg* **11** (1936) 179.
- [11] C. Kassel and V. Turaev, *Braid groups*, Graduate Texts in Mathematics volume 247, Springer, Germany (2008).
- [12] M. Gaudin, *Le fonction d'onde de Bethe*, Masson, France (1983).
- [13] K. Hori, A. Iqbal and C. Vafa, *D-branes and mirror symmetry*, [hep-th/0005247](#) [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [14] H.N.V. Temperley and E.H. Lieb, *Relations between the “percolation” and “colouring” problem and other graph-theoretical problems associated with regular planar lattices: some exact results for the “percolation” problem*, *Proc. Roy. Soc. London A* **322** (1971) 251.

- [15] M. Pimsner and S. Popa, *Entropy and index for subfactors*, *Ann. Sci. Ec. Norm. Sup.* **19** (1986) 57.
- [16] H. Behnke and K. Stein, *Entwicklung analytischer Funktionen au Riemannschen Flächen*, *Math. Ann.* **120** (1948) 430.
- [17] S. Cecotti,  *$N = 2$  Landau-Ginzburg versus Calabi-Yau  $\sigma$ -models: Nonperturbative aspects*, *Int. J. Mod. Phys. A* **6** (1991) 1749 [INSPIRE].
- [18] H. Behnke and K. Stein, *Elementarfunktionen auf Riemannschen Flächen*, *Canad. J. Math.* **2** (1950) 152.
- [19] O. Forster, *Lectures on Riemann surfaces*, Springer, Germany (1981).
- [20] W. Lerche, C. Vafa and N.P. Warner, *Chiral rings in  $N = 2$  superconformal theories*, *Nucl. Phys. B* **324** (1989) 427 [INSPIRE].
- [21] E. Witten, *Supersymmetry and Morse theory*, *J. Diff. Geom.* **17** (1982) 661.
- [22] S. Cecotti, L. Girardello and A. Pasquinucci, *Singularity theory and  $N = 2$  supersymmetry*, *Int. J. Mod. Phys. A* **6** (1991) 2427 [INSPIRE].
- [23] P. Griffiths and J. Harris, *Principles of algebraic geometry*, Wiley, U.S.A. (1978).
- [24] R.B. Laughlin, *Anomalous quantum Hall effect: an incompressible quantum fluid with fractionally charged excitations*, *Phys. Rev. Lett.* **50** (1983) 1395 [INSPIRE].
- [25] H. Grauert and R. Remmert, *Theory of Stein spaces*, Springer, Germany (1977).
- [26] F. Forstneric, *Stein manifolds and holomorphic mappings*, Springer, Germany (2011).
- [27] P. Griffiths and J. Adams, *Topics in algebraic and analytic geometry*, Mathematical Notes volume 13, Princeton University Press, Princeton U.S.A. (1974).
- [28] K. Hori et al., *Mirror symmetry*, Clay mathematics monographs volume 1, American Mathematical Society, U.S.A. (2003).
- [29] S. Cecotti, *Geometry of  $N = 2$  Landau-Ginzburg families*, *Nucl. Phys. B* **355** (1991) 755 [INSPIRE].
- [30] E. Witten, *Constraints on Supersymmetry Breaking*, *Nucl. Phys. B* **202** (1982) 253 [INSPIRE].
- [31] P. Griffiths, *Topics in transcendental algebraic geometry*, Princeton University Press, Princeton U.S.A. (1984).
- [32] M. Hutchings, *Lecture notes on Morse homology (with an eye towards Floer theory and pseudoholomorphic curves)*, available on-line at [http://www.math.toronto.edu/mgualt/Morse Theory/mfp.pdf](http://www.math.toronto.edu/mgualt/Morse%20Theory/mfp.pdf) (2002).
- [33] B. Dubrovin, *Geometry and integrability of topological-antitopological fusion*, *Commun. Math. Phys.* **152** (1993) 539 [hep-th/9206037] [INSPIRE].
- [34] M. Sato, T. Miwa and M. Jimbo, *Holonomic quantum fields I*, *Publ. R.I.M.S.* **14** (1978) 223.
- [35] M. Sato, T. Miwa and M. Jimbo, *Holonomic quantum fields II*, *Publ. R.I.M.S.* **15** (1979) 201.
- [36] M. Sato, T. Miwa and M. Jimbo, *Holonomic quantum fields III*, *Publ. R.I.M.S.* **15** (1979) 577.

- [37] M. Sato, T. Miwa and M. Jimbo, *Holonomic quantum fields IV*, *Publ. R.I.M.S.* **15** (1979) 871.
- [38] M. Sato, T. Miwa and M. Jimbo, *Holonomic quantum fields V*, *Publ. R.I.M.S.* **16** (1981) 531.
- [39] M. Jimbo and T. Miwa, *Aspects of holonomic quantum fields*, Lecture Notes in Physics volume 126, Springer, Germany (1980).
- [40] M. Jimbo and T. Miwa, *Integrable systems and infinite dimensional Lie algebras*, in *Integrable systems in statistical mechanics*, G.M. D'Ariano et al. eds., World Scientific, Singapore (1988).
- [41] M. Jimbo, *Introduction to holonomic quantum fields for mathematicians*, *Proc. Symp. Pure Math.* **49** (1989) 379.
- [42] P. Deligne, *Travaux de Griffiths*, *Séminaire Bourbaki* **12** (1971) Exposé no. 376.
- [43] S. Cecotti, *Supersymmetric field theories. Geometric structures and dualities*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge U.K. (2015).
- [44] S. Cecotti, P. Fendley, K.A. Intriligator and C. Vafa, *A new supersymmetric index*, *Nucl. Phys. B* **386** (1992) 405 [[hep-th/9204102](#)] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [45] A.B. Zamolodchikov, *Irreversibility of the flux of the renormalization group in a 2D field theory*, *JETP Lett.* **43** (1986) 730 [*Pisma Zh. Eksp. Teor. Fiz.* **43** (1986) 565] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [46] V.I. Arnol'd, *The cohomology ring of the colored braid group*, *Math. Notes* **5** (1969) 138.
- [47] R.J. Lawrence, *Homological representations of the Hecke algebra*, *Commun. Math. Phys.* **135** (1990) 141.
- [48] D. Gaiotto and E. Witten, *Knot invariants from four-dimensional gauge theory*, *Adv. Theor. Math. Phys.* **16** (2012) 935 [[arXiv:1106.4789](#)] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [49] S. Cecotti and C. Vafa, *2d wall-crossing, R-twisting and a supersymmetric index*, [arXiv:1002.3638](#) [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [50] E. Witten, *Analytic continuation of Chern-Simons theory*, *AMS/IP Stud. Adv. Math.* **50** (2011) 347 [[arXiv:1001.2933](#)] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [51] E. Witten, *A new look at the path integral of quantum mechanics*, [arXiv:1009.6032](#).
- [52] T. Kohno, *Monodromy representations of braid groups and Yang-Baxter equations*, *Ann. Inst. Fourier* **37** (1987) 139.
- [53] T. Kohno, *Hecke algebra representations of braid groups and classical Yang-Baxter equations*, in *Conformal field theory and solvable lattice models*, M. Jimbo ed., Advanced Studies in Pure Mathematics volume 16, Academic Press, U.S.A. (1988).
- [54] T. Kohno, *Conformal field theory and topology*, Translations of Mathematical Monographs volume 210, American Mathematical Society, U.S.A. (2002).
- [55] T. Kohno, *Quantum and homological representations of braid groups*, in *Configuration spaces — Geometry, combinatorics and topology*, A. Bjorner et al. eds., Edizioni della Normale, Pisa Italy (2012),.
- [56] C. Arias Abad, *Introduction to representations of braid groups*, [arXiv:1404.0724](#).
- [57] S. Cecotti and C. Vafa, *Classification of complete  $N = 2$  supersymmetric theories in 4 dimensions*, *Surv. Diff. Geom.* **18** (2013) [[arXiv:1103.5832](#)] [[INSPIRE](#)].

- [58] M. Alim et al., *BPS quivers and spectra of complete  $N = 2$  quantum field theories*, *Commun. Math. Phys.* **323** (2013) 1185 [[arXiv:1109.4941](#)] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [59] S. Cecotti, A. Neitzke and C. Vafa, *R-twisting and 4d/2d correspondences*, [arXiv:1006.3435](#) [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [60] S.I. Gelfand and Yu.I. Manin, *Methods of homological algebra*, 2<sup>nd</sup> edition, Springer, Germany (2003).
- [61] S. Cecotti, *Nonperturbative computability versus integrability in SUSY QFTs*, in *Integrable quantum field theories*, L. Bonodra et al. eds., Springer, Germany (1993).
- [62] S.K. Lando and A. K. Zvonkin, *Graphs on surfaces and their applications*, Encyclopaedia of Mathematical Sciences **141**, Springer, Germany (2004).
- [63] M.W. Davis, *The geometry and topology of Coxeter groups*, Princeton University Press, Princeton U.S.A. (2008).
- [64] C.M. Ringel, *Tame algebras and integral quadratic forms*, Lectures Notes in Mathematics volume 1099, Springer, Germany (1984).
- [65] B. Keller and S. Scherotzke, *Linear recurrence relations for cluster variables of affine quivers*, [arXiv:1004.0613](#).
- [66] R. Stekolshchik, *Notes on Coxeter transformations and the McKay correspondence*, Springer Monographs in Mathematics, Springer, Germany (2008).
- [67] B. Allison et al., *Extended affine Lie Algebras and their root systems*, Memoires of the American Mathematical Society volume 126, American Mathematical Society, U.S.A. (1997).
- [68] E. Neher, *Lectures on extended affine Lie algebras*, [arXiv:1003.2352](#) [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [69] S. Cecotti and M. Del Zotto, *Galois covers of  $\mathcal{N} = 2$  BPS spectra and quantum monodromy*, *Adv. Theor. Math. Phys.* **20** (2016) 1227 [[arXiv:1503.07485](#)] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [70] E. Gironondo and G. Gonzáles-Diez, *Introduction to compact Riemann Surfaces and Dessins d’Enfants*, London Mathematical Society Student Texts volume 79, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge U.K. (2011).
- [71] G.A. Jones and J. Wolfart, *Dessins d’Enfants on Riemann surfaces*, Springer Monographs in Mathematics, Springer, Germany (2016).
- [72] J. Wolfart, *ABC for polynomials, dessins d’enfants, and uniformization — a survey*, in the *Proceedings der ELAZ-Konferenz 2004*, Franz Steiner Verlag, Stuttgart Germany (2006).
- [73] A. Fröhlich and A.J. Taylor, *Algebraic number theory*, Cambridge studies in advanced mathematics volume 27, Cambridge University Press. Cambridge U.K. (1993).
- [74] J. Milnor, *Singular points of complex hypersurfaces*, Annals of Mathematical Studies volume 61, Princeton University Press, Princeton U.S.A. (1968).
- [75] B.M. McCoy, C.A. Tracy and T.T. Wu, *Painleve functions of the third kind*, *J. Math. Phys.* **18** (1977) 1058 [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [76] T.T. Wu, B.M. McCoy, C.A. Tracy and E. Barouch, *Spin spin correlation functions for the two-dimensional Ising model: Exact theory in the scaling region*, *Phys. Rev.* **B 13** (1976) 316 [[INSPIRE](#)].



- [77] A.R. Its and V.Yu. Novokshenov, *The isomonodromic deformation method in the theory of Painlevé equations*, Lectures Notes in Mathematics volume 1191, Springer, Germany (1986).
- [78] A.S. Fokas, A.R. Its, A.A. Kapaev and V. Yu. Novokshenov, *Painlevé transcendents. The Riemann-Hilbert approach*, Mathematical Surveys and Monographs volume 128, Maerican Mathematical Society, U.S.A. (2006).
- [79] C.A. Tracy, *Asymptotics of a  $\tau$ -function arising in the two-dimensional Ising model*, *Commun. Math. Phys.* **142** (1991) 207.
- [80] A.A. Belavin, A.M. Polyakov and A.B. Zamolodchikov, *Infinite conformal symmetry in two-dimensional quantum field theory*, *Nucl. Phys. B* **241** (1984) 333 [INSPIRE].
- [81] C. Kassel, *Quantum groups*, Graduate Texts in Mathematics volume 155, Springer, Germany (1995).
- [82] G. Felder, J. Fröhlich and G. Keller, *Braid matrices and structure constants for minimal conformal models*, *Commun. Math. Phys.* **124** (1989) 647 [INSPIRE].
- [83] A.A. Belavin and V.G. Drinfel'd, *Solutions of the classical Yang-Baxter equation for simple Lie algebras*, *Funct. Anal. Appl.* **16** (1982) 1.
- [84] R. Haag, J.T. Lopuszanski and M. Sohnius, *All possible generators of supersymmetries of the S-matrix*, *Nucl. Phys. B* **272** (1975) 598.
- [85] V.F.R. Jones, *Hecke algebra representations of braid groups and link polynomials*, *Annals Math.* **126** (1987) 335 [INSPIRE].
- [86] J. Birman, *Braid, links, and mapping class groups*, Annals of Mathematical Studies volume 82, Princeton University Press, Princeton U.S.A. (1974).
- [87] C.C. Squier, *The Burau representation is unitary*, *Proc. Amer. Math. Soc.* **90** (1984) 199.
- [88] L. Funar and T. Kohno, *On Burau representations at roots of unity*, *Geom. Ded.* **169** (2014) 145.
- [89] E. Witten, *Quantum field theory and the Jones polynomial*, *Commun. Math. Phys.* **121** (1989) 243.
- [90] E. Frenkel, *Gaudin model and opers*, [math/0407524](#).
- [91] S. Bigelow, *Representations of braid groups*, in *Proceedings of the International Congress of Mathematicians. Volume 2*, Higher Ed. Press, Beijing, China (2002).
- [92] S. Bigelow, *The Lawrence-Krammer representation*, in *Topology and geometry of manifolds*, G. Matic ed., Proceedings and Symposia on Pure Mathematics volume 71, American Mathematical Society, U.S.A. (2003).
- [93] V. Schechtman and A. Varchenko, *Hypergeometric solutions of the Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov equation*, *Lett. Math. Phys.* **20** (1990) 93.
- [94] E. Date, M Jimbo, A. Matsuo and T. Miwa, *Hypergeometric type integrals and the  $sl(2, C)$  Knizhnik-Zamolodchikov equations*, *Int. J. Mod. Phys. B* **4** (1990) 1049.
- [95] N. Reshetikhin and A. Varchenko, *Quasiclassical asymptotics of solutions to the KZ equations*, [hep-th/9402126](#) [INSPIRE].
- [96] T. Kohno, *Homological representations of braid groups and KZ connections*, *J. Singularities* **5** (2012) 94.



- [97] T. Kohno, *Local systems on configuration spaces, KZ connections and conformal blocks*, *Acta Math. Vietnamica* **39** (2014) 575.
- [98] S. Szegő, *Orthogonal polynomials*, 4<sup>th</sup> edition, Colloquium Publications, American Mathematical Society, U.S.A. (1975).
- [99] E. Heine, *Handbuch der Kugelfunctionen*, volume 1 and 2, Wentworth PR, Berlin Germany (1881).
- [100] T.S. Stieltjes, *Sur certains polynômes que vérifient une équation différentielle linéaire du second ordre et sur la théorie des fonctions de Lamé*, *Acta Math.* **6** (1885) 321.
- [101] M. Bôcher, *The roots of polynomials that satisfy certain differential equations of the second order*, *Bull. Amer. Math. Soc.* **4** (1897) 256.
- [102] E.B. Van Vleck, *On the polynomials of Stieltjes*, *Bull. Amer. Math. Soc.* **4** (1898) 426.
- [103] G. Pólya, *Sur un théorème de Stieltjes*, *C.R. Acad. Sci. Paris* **155** (1912) 767.
- [104] M. Marden, *On Stieltjes polynomials*, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.* **33** (1931) 934.
- [105] G.M. Shah, *On the zeros of the van Vleck polynomials*, *Proc. Amer. Math. Soc.* **19** (1968) 1421.
- [106] G.M. Shah, *Monotonic variation of the zeros of Stieltjes and van Vleck polynomials*, *J. Indian Math. Soc.* **33** (1969) 85.
- [107] G.M. Shah, *On the zeros of Stieltjes and Van Vleck polynomials*, *Illinois J. Math.* **14** (1970) 522.
- [108] N. Zaheer, *On Stieltjes and van Vleck polynomials*, *Proc. Amer. Math. Soc.* **60** (1976) 169.
- [109] N. Zaheer and M. Alam, *On the zeros of Stieltjes and van Vleck polynomials*, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.* **229** (1977) 279.
- [110] M. Alam, *Zeros of Stieltjes and van Vleck polynomials*, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.* **252** (1979) 197.
- [111] A.M. Al-Rashed and N. Zaheer, *Zeros of Stieltjes and van Vleck polynomials and applications*, *J. Math. Anal. Appl.* **110** (1985) 327.
- [112] D.K. Dimitrov and W. Van Assche, *Lamé differential equations and electrostatics*, *Proc. Amer. Math. Soc.* **128** (2000) 3621 [Erratum *ibid.* **131** (2003) 2303].
- [113] A. Martínez-Finkelshtein and E.B. Saff, *Asymptotic properties of Heine-Stieltjes and Van Vleck polynomials*, *J. Approx. Theor.* **134** (2002) 131.
- [114] J. Borcea and B. Shapiro, *Root asymptotics of spectral polynomials for the Lamé operator*, *Commun. Math. Phys.* **282** (2008) 323.
- [115] A. Bourget, T. McMillen and A. Vargas, *Interlacing and non-orthogonality of spectral polynomials for the Lamé operator*, *Proc. Amer. Math. Soc.* **137** (2009) 1699.
- [116] B. Shapiro, K. Takemura, and M. Tater, *On spectral polynomial of the Heun equation. II*, [arXiv:0904.0650](https://arxiv.org/abs/0904.0650).
- [117] B. Shapiro and M. Tater, *On spectral polynomial of the Heun equation. I*, *J. Approx. Theor.* **162** (2010) 766.
- [118] A. Bourget and T. McMillen, *On the distribution and interlacing of the zeros of Stieltjes polynomials*, *Proc. Amer. Math. Soc.* **138** (2010) 3267.

- [119] A. Martínez-Finkelshtein and E.A. Rakhmanov, *On asymptotic behavior of Heine-Stieltjes and Van Vleck polynomials*, *Contemp. Math.* **507** (2010) 209.
- [120] B. Shapiro, *Algebro-geometric aspects of Heine-Stieltjes theory*, *J. London Math. Soc.* **183** (2011) 36.
- [121] A. Martínez-Finkelshtein and E.A. Rakhmanov, *Critical measures, quadratic differentials, and weak limits of zeros of Stieltjes polynomials*, *Commun. Math. Phys.* **302** (2011) 53.
- [122] B. Shapiro, and M. Tater, *Polynomial solutions of the Heun equation*, *Acta Polytechn.* **51** (2011) 90.
- [123] N. Nekrasov, A. Rosly and S. Shatashvili, *Darboux coordinates, Yang-Yang functional and gauge theory*, *Nucl. Phys. Proc. Suppl.* **216** (2011) 69 [[arXiv:1103.3919](#)] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [124] V.V. Schechtman. and A.N. Varchenko, *Arrangements of hyperplanes and Lie algebra homology*, *Invent. Math.* **106** (1991) 139.
- [125] E. Mukhin and A. Varchenko, *Norm of a Bethe vector and the Hessian of the master function*, *Compos. Math.* **141** (2005) 1012 [[math.QA/0402349](#)].
- [126] B. Feigin, E. Frenkel and N. Reshetikhin, *Gaudin model, Bethe ansatz and correlation functions at the critical level*, *Commun. Math. Phys.* **166** (1994) 27 [[hep-th/9402022](#)] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [127] L.G. Rybnikov, *Argument shift method and Gaudin model*, *Func. Anal. Appl.* **40** (2006) 30 [[math.RT/0606380](#)].
- [128] B. Feigin, E. Frenkel and V. Toledano-Laredo, *Gaudin models with irregular singularities*, [math/0612798](#).
- [129] B. Feigin, E. Frenkel and L. Rybnikov, *Opers with irregular singularity and spectra of the shift of argument subalgebra*, [arXiv:0712.1183](#).
- [130] R. Dijkgraaf and C. Vafa, *Matrix models, topological strings and supersymmetric gauge theories*, *Nucl. Phys. B* **644** (2002) 3 [[hep-th/0206255](#)] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [131] R. Dijkgraaf and C. Vafa, *On geometry and matrix models*, *Nucl. Phys. B* **644** (2002) 21 [[hep-th/0207106](#)] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [132] R. Dijkgraaf and C. Vafa, *Toda theories, matrix models, topological strings and  $N = 2$  gauge systems*, [arXiv:0909.2453](#) [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [133] N.J. Hitchin, A. Karlhede, U. Lindström and M. Roček, *Hyper-Kähler metrics and supersymmetry*, *Commun. Math. Phys.* **108** (1987) 535 [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [134] H. Ooguri and C. Vafa, *Summing up  $D$  instantons*, *Phys. Rev. Lett.* **77** (1996) 3296 [[hep-th/9608079](#)] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [135] D. Gaiotto, G.W. Moore and A. Neitzke, *Four-dimensional wall-crossing via three-dimensional field theory*, *Commun. Math. Phys.* **299** (2010) 163 [[arXiv:0807.4723](#)] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [136] J. Harris, *Algebraic Geometry, a first course*, Springer, Germany (1992).
- [137] P. Bellingeri, *On presentation of surface braid groups*, [math/0110129](#).
- [138] R.C. Blanchfield, *Intersection theory on manifolds with operators with applications to knot theory*, *Ann. Math.* **65** (1957) 340.
- [139] A.A. Kawauchi, *A survey of knot theory*, Birkhäuser, Germany (1996).

- [140] G.W. Moore and N. Read, *Nonabelions in the fractional quantum Hall effect*, *Nucl. Phys. B* **360** (1991) 362 [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [141] N. Read and E. Rezayi, *Beyond paired quantum Hall states: Parafermions and incompressible states in the first excited Landau level*, *Phys. Rev. B* **59** (1999) 8084 [[cond-mat/9809384](#)].
- [142] M. Bershadsky, S. Cecotti, H. Ooguri and C. Vafa, *Holomorphic anomalies in topological field theories*, *Nucl. Phys. B* **405** (1993) 279 [[hep-th/9302103](#)] [[INSPIRE](#)].
- [143] J. Carlson, S. Müller-Stach and C. Peters, *Period mappings and period domains*, 2<sup>nd</sup> edition, Cambridge studies in advanced mathematics volume 168, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge U.K. (2017).
- [144] K. Liu, X. Sun, X. Yang and S.T. Yau, *Curvatures of moduli space of curves and applications*, [arXiv:1312.6932](#).
- [145] M.M. Postnikov, *Geometry VI. Riemannian geometry*, Encyclopaedia of Mathematical Sciences volume 91, Springer, Germany (2001).